The

Appositive Participle

in

Anglo-Saxon

By

Morgan Callaway, Jr.

Professor of English in the University of Texas


Baltimore

The Modern Language Association of America

1901
CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION ............................................................................................................. 141
I. The Dual Nature of the Participle; Definitions ............................................... 141
II. The History of the Term Appositive Participle ................................................. 144
III. The Relative Age of the Several Uses of the Participle................................. 149
IV. The Inflexion and the Position of the Appositive Participle ......................... 150

CHAPTER I. STATISTICS OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN
ANGLO-SAXON ............................................................................................................. 154
I. In the Prose Works ............................................................................................... 155
II. In the Poems ........................................................................................................ 234
III. Synoptic Table ................................................................................................... 266

CHAPTER II. USES OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-
SAXON ......................................................................................................................... 268
I. The Adjectival Use ............................................................................................... 270
II. The Adverbial Use ............................................................................................... 273
1. Modal ..................................................................................................................... 274
2. Temporal ............................................................................................................... 278
3. Causal .................................................................................................................... 279
4. Final ....................................................................................................................... 280
5. Concessive ............................................................................................................ 282
6. Conditional .......................................................................................................... 284
III. The Co-ordinate Use .......................................................................................... 285
1. The “Circumstantial” Participle ......................................................................... 286
2. The “Iterating” Participle .................................................................................... 287
3. Notes ..................................................................................................................... 289
IV. Summary of Uses ............................................................................................... 292

CHAPTER III. ORIGIN OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN
ANGLO-SAXON ........................................................................................................... 297
I. The Adjectival Use ............................................................................................... 298
II. The Adverbial Use ............................................................................................... 300
1. Modal ..................................................................................................................... 300
2. Temporal ............................................................................................................... 301
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CONTENTS.</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3. Causal.</td>
<td>302</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. Final.</td>
<td>304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. Concessive.</td>
<td>304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. Conditional.</td>
<td>305</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III. The Co-ordinate Use.</td>
<td>306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV. The Governing Power of the Participle.</td>
<td>307</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. The Present Participle.</td>
<td>307</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. The Preterite Participle.</td>
<td>313</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V. Table of Latin Correspondences.</td>
<td>315</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**CHAPTER IV. THE ANGLO-SAXON RENDERING OF THE LATIN APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE.**

I. By a Co-ordinated Finite Verb. | 321
II. By a Subordinated Finite Verb. | 321
III. By a Prepositional Phrase. | 326
IV. By a Verb in the Infinitive Mood. | 327
V. By an Attributive Participle. | 328
VI. By an Absolute Participle. | 328
VII. By an Adverb. | 328
VIII. By an Adjective. | 328
IX. By a Substantive. | 329

**CHAPTER V. THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN THE OTHER GERMANIC LANGUAGES.**

I. Uses. | 330
1. In Gothic. | 330
2. In the Scandinavian Languages. | 332
3. In High German. | 334
4. In Old Saxon. | 338
II. Origin. | 339
III. Rendering of Greek and Latin Appositive Participle. | 341

**CHAPTER VI. THE ANGLO-SAXON APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE AS A NORM OF STYLE.** | 344

**CHAPTER VII. RESULTS.** | 348

**ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS.** | 353

**BIBLIOGRAPHY.** | 355
VIII.—THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

INTRODUCTION.

I.

The twofold nature of the participle is sufficiently attested by the fact that it is universally defined as a verbal adjective. The genesis of this twofold nature has been interestingly discussed by Brugmann (I. F., v, 88 ff.; Gr. Gr. §§ 479 f.) and by Delbrück (II, p. 477). Mine is the humbler task of pointing out the various manifestations of this dual nature as exemplified in the appositive use of the participle in Anglo-Saxon; to which is appended a brief survey of the same phenomena in the other Germanic languages. This is by no means an easy task, since the same participle may be dominantly adjectival in one sentence, prevailingly verbal in another, and equally divided between the two in a third. Of course, too, a participle may be used as a noun; but in such case it ceases to be a participle; hence in this paper no account is taken of the substantivized participle. However, certain adverbial uses of the participle are treated.

The difficulty of our problem is further aggravated by the diversity of meaning attached to the same term by different
grammarians. At the outset, therefore, it is necessary to define the terms used in this monograph. The study is based upon a twofold classification of the participle: (I) According to the nature of the participle; (II) According to the relationship of the participle to its subject (or principal).

According to its nature, a participle is (1) verbal when the assertive force is dominant, and (2) adjectival when the descriptive force is dominant; as a rule, the verbal participle denotes an act in the widest sense, while the adjectival denotes a state. These terms, of course, are relative only, and under different collocations each is equally applicable to the same word. Thus, in the phrase, the shining sun, shining is adjectival, if not an adjective; while in the sentence, The sun, shining through the trees, lighted our path, the participle is verbal. But, despite this relativity, the distinction is of great importance; and it is possible to mark off certain more or less stable groups. The preterite participle, for instance, is more adjectival than the present; as the present participle with an object is more verbal than one without an object. Occasionally, too, a participle is so constantly used adjectivally that it becomes an adjective proper, as in the case of the Latin sanctus, the A.-S. cuð, etc. The completely adjectivized participle is not treated in this monograph.

According to its relationship to its principal, a participle is (A) independent (or absolute) when its subject is grammatically independent of the rest of the sentence, and (B) dependent (or conjoint) when its subject is not grammatically independent of the rest of the sentence, but is intimately bound up therewith. Examples are:—(A): Bede¹ 284. 20: swa eallum geseondum upp in heofonas gewat = Bede² 220. 11: sic uidentibus cunctis ad alta subduxit (see my Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 5 ff.);—(B): Luke 4. 40: he syndrygum hys hand onsettende hig gehælde = ille singulis manus imponens curabat eos. The dependent (or conjoint) participle may be subdivided into (1) predicative (or supplementary, cf. Goodwin, Moods and Tenses, § 877), when the participle is joined to its
subject by means of a verb; (2) non-predicative (or assumptive, cf. Sweet, § 44), when not joined to its subject by the instrumentality of a verb. The predicative participle may be subdivided into (a) predicate nominative and (b) predicate accusative; the non-predicative (or assumptive), into (a) attributive, when the connection between the participle and its principal is so close that the two constitute one indivisible idea, and (b) appositive, when the connection between the participle and its principal is so loose that the two seem to constitute two independent ideas; or, to use the words of Sweet (§ 90): “When the subordination of an assumptive (attributive) word to its head-word is so slight that the two are almost co-ordinate, the adjunct-word is said to be in apposition to its head-word.” A few examples will suffice for illustration:—(1) Predicative (or Supplementary): (a) *Predicate Nominative*: Elene 492: Stephanus wæs stanum worpod;—ib. 486: ða ðy ðriddan ðæg lifgende aras, etc.;—
(b) *Predicate Accusative*: Luke 22. 56: ða hine geseah sum ðinen æt leohæ sittende = quem cum vidisset ancilla quædam sedentem ad lumen;—Bl. Hom. 218. 7: ða mette he ðane man forðferedne, etc.;—(2) Non-predicative (or Assumptive): (a) *Attributive*: Beow. 741: he gefeng hræðe forman síðe sleepende rinc;—ib. 581: ða meo sæ ððbær . . . wudu weal-lendu;—ib. 1245: ðær on bence wæs . . . yðgesene . . . hringed byrne;—ib. 216: guman ut soufon . . . wudu bundenne, etc.;—
(b) *Appositive*: Mat. 9. 12: se Hælend cwæð, ðis gehyrende = At Jesus audiens, ait;—Luke 1. 74: ðæt we butan ege of ure feonda handa alysede him ðeowian = Ut sine timore, de manu . . . liberati, serviamus illi;—Mat. 8. 9: Soðlice ic eom man under anwealde gesett = Nam et ego homo sum sub potestate constitutus;—Ælfr. Hom. 1, 62*: Johannes beseah to heofonum, ðus cwæðende, etc.

No originality is claimed for the above classification; for, although I have not found the system as a whole in any treatise, almost every one of the terms is substantially so used in one or more standard works. Nor is the system
looked upon as ideal; it is given merely because it seems a fair working scheme for this monograph. But, while I believe that all my terms are clear as above defined and exemplified, the word appositive demands more extended treatment, since it gives the title to this paper.

II.

Remoteness from the larger libraries precludes my giving a complete history of the phrase appositive participle; and I must content myself with a brief statement concerning the more important grammatical treatises that have been accessible to me. Fortunately, as a reference to the bibliography will show, I have been able to consult all the most significant monographs (old as well as new) on the participle in Anglo-Saxon and in the other Teutonic tongues.

The phrase appositive participle is not used as a distinct category by Grimm, Becker, Mätzner, Koch, March, Sweet, or Delbrück among the Germanic grammarians, or by Classen, Draeger, Gildersleeve, or Goodwin among the classicists. The locution seems to have been habitually used first by Krüger and Curtius in their Greek grammars, by Madvig in his Latin grammar, by Gabelentz and Löbe in their Gothic grammar, and by Vernaleken in his Deutsche Syntax; and its present currency is perhaps largely due to the wide popularity of these works, especially the first three.

By the grammarians who regularly make use of the phrase, two distinct definitions have been given. The one set restricts the term appositive to the participle that is equal to a dependent adverbial (conjunctive) clause, while the other extends it also to the participle that is equivalent to a dependent adjectival (relative) clause. Judged by their definitions, Krüger and Curtius originally sided with the former. Krüger's state-

1In his Greek grammar of 1829 (pp. 469, 474), however, Bernhardy has a few words concerning the appositive use of the participle.
ment is as follows (p. 215)1: "Die appositive Participial-
construction und ihr zur Seite gehend die absolute sind eine
unklarere Ausdrucksweise für Sätze die mit dem Hauptsatze
in einem temporalen oder realen Verhältnisse stehen." Examples are cited of the appositive participle in (1) temporal, (2) conditional, (3) causal, and (4) concessive clauses, but not in adjectival (relative) clauses, though under the head of
(temporal) uses (p. 217, 10, Anmk. 1) this remark is made:
"In vielen Fällen übersetzen wir die Participia durch das
Relativ oder durch Conjunctionen." To the same effect is
the definition of Curtius (§ 579 5): "Das Partizip dient dazu,
einem Substantiv etwas als eine nur vorübergehende Eigen-
schaft oder Thätigkeit beizulegen. In diesem Falle ist das
Partizip eine kurze und unbestimmtere Ausdrucksweise für
das, was sonst durch Nebensätze mit Conjunctionen der
verschiedensten Art ausgedrückt wird." In the following
sections (580-583) he gives examples of the appositive partici-
ciple in (1) temporal, (2) causal and final, (3) concessive, and
(4) conditional clauses; adding this note3: "Bei dem man-
nichfaltigen Gebrauch der appositiven Participien ist nicht
zu übersehen, dass ein solches Partizip an sich keine der in
§§ 580-583 entwickelten Bedeutungen deutlich ausdrückt,
dass wir vielmehr nur zur Übersetzung uns der einen oder
der andern Wendung bedienen, um dasselbe in schärfere
Weise auszusprechen, was durch das Partizip nur angedeutet

1 I quote from the fifth edition of his Attische Syntax (Leipzig, 1873),
but the same statement, I have been informed, occurs in the first edition
(Leipzig, 1843).

2 I quote from the ninth edition (Prag, 1870), but substantially the same
statement is made in the first edition (Prag, 1852). And in the chapter
on the Participle in his Erläuterungen3 (p. 203) Curtius thus acknowledges
his indebtedness to Krüger: "In der Gliederung dieser Gebrauchsweisen
bin ich wesentlich K. W. Krüger gefolgt, ohne jedoch in der Reihenfolge
mich ihm anzuschliessen."—My quotation is from the third edition of the
Erläuterungen (1875), but it does not differ essentially from the statement
of the first edition (1863).

3 This note is not in the first edition of the grammar.
ist.” Gering specifically restricts the appositive participle to adverbial clauses (p. 393): “Während das attributive particip bestimmend und erklärend zu dem nomen tritt, dient das appositive dazu, gewisse adverbiale nebenbestimmungen der handlung auszudrücken. Es bezeichnet daher, in welcher zeit, aus welchem grunde, in welcher absicht, unter welchen bedingungen oder einschränkungen, durch welche mittel, auf welche art und weise eine person oder ein gegenstand etwas ausführte oder erlitt. Characteristisch für das appositive particip ist es, dass es nie den artikel bei sich hat.” The same restriction is made by Karl Köhler and by Kühn, though the latter does not use the term appositive, but speaks of the use of the participle “in eigentlicher participialer Funktion in Vertretung eines Adverbialsatzes.”

But, despite the high standing of Krüger, Curtius, and Gering, the restriction of the appositive participle to adverbial uses seems unwise. Indeed, it may be doubted whether Curtius intended so to limit the term by the definition above quoted; if so, he afterwards changed his mind, for in his Erläuterungen (p. 203) he gives a definition of the appositive participle that includes its use in adjectival (relative) as well as in adverbial (conjunctive) clauses: “Der ‘appositive Gebrauch’ schliesst sich an die § 361, 12 gegebene Definition der Apposition an. Wie ich unter Apposition einer Zusatz loserer Art verstehe, welcher in der Regel synonym mit einem beschreibenden Zwischen—oder Nebensatz ist, so entsprechen die appositiven Participlen als kürzere, losere und deshalb auch weniger bestimmte Ausdrucksweisen wesentlich demselben Zwecke, der in festerer Weise durch relative und Conjunctionssätze erreicht wird.” The remainder of his comment, though not on this point, is too instructive to omit: “Classen in seinen oben (S. 173) erwähnten Beobachtungen über den homerischen Sprachgebrauch nennt den von mir appositiv genannten Gebrauch

1 The italics are mine.
prädicativ. Ich verkenne nicht, dass sich auch diese Bezeichnung rechtfertigen lässt, insofern als das appositive Partizip, unterschieden vom attributiven, allerdings eine aussagende, prädizierende Kraft besitzt, die am entschiedensten in den absolu-uten Participialconstructionen hervortritt. Allein es scheint mir doch gerathener, den Ausdruck prädicatives Partizip mit Krüger auf denjenigen Gebrauch zu beschränken, bei welchem das Partizip zur Ergänzung eines verbalen Prädicats dient (§ 589 bis 594) und als solches einen wesentlichen Theil der Aussage bildet." Vernaleken leaves no doubt as to his position (p. 502): "Das partizip welches dazu dient einem substantiv etwas als eine nur vorübergehende eigenschaft oder thätigkei beizulegen, also appositionell steht, und so eine kürzere ausdrucksweise ist für das, was sonst durch nebensätze mit bindewörtern oder dem relativ ausgedrückt wird, findet sich," etc.; which definition clearly includes adjective (relative) as well as adverbal (conjunctive) clauses. With this O. Erdmann substantially agrees; for, while he does not use the phrase appositive participle, it is clear that his selbständiges Partici-pium of the following quotation corresponds to Vernaleken's appositive participle (Syntax d. Spr. Otfrids, p. 214): "Die verbale Natur des Participiums tritt nicht immer in gleichem Masse hervor. Ich suche bei einem jeden der beiden Participia, welche die ahd. Sprache besitzt, die Belege mit Rücksicht hierauf zu ordnen, und unterscheide drei Abschnitte, je nachdem das Partizipium eine selbständige, von der Handlung des Hauptsatzes unterschiedene Tätigkeit aussagt, oder prädicativ mit dem Verbum zu dem Begriffe einer einzigen Tätigkeit verschmilzt, oder endlich attributiv wie ein Adj. gebraucht wird um eine dem Gegenstande, auf welchen es sich bezieht, stetig inwohnende Eigenschaft zu bezeichnen." In his examples Erdmann cites participles that represent adjectival as well as adverbal clauses; as does Mourek, who (p. 33) speaks of the participle "in selbständiger, prädicativer, satzvertretender apposition." With the exception of K. Köhler and of Kühn, who, as already stated,
restrict the appositive participle to adverbial clauses, all\(^1\) the writers on Old English Syntax named in the bibliography include under the appositive use of the participle adjectival as well as adverbial clauses. Some (Conradi, Einenkel, Flamme, Höser, Kempf, Mohrbutter, Schürmann, Wülffing\(^2\)) use the phrase appositive participle; others (Furkert, Hertel, Planer, Reussner, Seyfarth, Spaeth, Wohlfahrt) speak of the "eigentliches Participium zur Abkürzung eines Satzes" (Wohlfahrt, p. 39); and others (Koch, Mätzner, March, Sweet) have no specific designation for the construction.

Another apparently divergent interpretation calls for brief mention. The standard New High German grammars of Brandt, von Jagemann, Thomas, and Whitney regularly use the expression appositive participle to indicate, in the words of Thomas, "an appositional predicate, which denotes a concomitant act or state;" but "such a participle or participial phrase is," according to Whitney\(^6\) (§ 357), "used only in the sense of an adjective clause, and expresses ordinarily an accompanying circumstance, or describes a state or condition; it may not be used, as in English, to signify a determining cause, or otherwise adverbially." But, as a following note by Whitney and some examples cited by Thomas show, this statement is somewhat too strong, for in New High German an appositive participle is occasionally used in place of a dependent adverbial clause. Moreover, in making the above remark, Whitney intended to acquaint his reader with New High German usage and not to give a general definition of a grammatical term.

To sum up the matter: by a number of eminent grammarians the phrase appositive participle is not used as a distinct category; by others equally eminent it is habitually used, but in different senses. Of the latter some restrict

\(^{1}\) Except the older grammarians (Hickes, Lye, and Manning), who do not treat the construction of the appositive participle.

\(^{2}\) Wülffing's treatment of the Appositive Participle has not appeared as yet.
the appositive use to the participle that is equivalent to an adverbial clause, while others make it include adjectival as well as adverbial clauses. The latter usage, though not universal, is becoming general, especially with students of Germanic grammar.

To me the general introduction of this term into our textbooks seems highly desirable, since it would extend to the use of the participle what the student had already learned with reference to the noun. As the statistics show, I include under appositive the participle that is equivalent to an adjectival clause as well as that which is equal to an adverbial clause. The uses of the adverbial appositive participle correspond closely to those of the subordinate adverbial clause, but are so varied as to call for treatment in a separate chapter (ii).

III.

The appositive use of the participle is common to the Indo-Germanic languages, but by no means equally common. Greek leads the others, and Latin is far in advance of the Germanic languages. An instructive general treatment of the subject is given by Jolly in his *Zur Lehre vom Particıp* and by Delbrück in his *Syntax*. To the works named by Delbrück I may add those of Bolling, Fay, Helm, Köberlin, Milroy, and Tammelin, which throw no little light on the appositive participle in Latin and in Greek. Of works on the appositive participle in the Germanic languages exclusive of English a brief account is given in Chapter v.

In the article just referred to, Jolly maintains that the attributive use of the participle preceded the appositive, and that the appositive preceded the predicative, which latter he considers a younger variation of the appositive. In Anglo-Saxon it is probable, I think, that the attributive use preceded the appositive, the latter growing out of the former when thrust into post-position, either because the noun had several participles modifying it at once or because the participle was itself
modified (see section iv., below). The appositive use of the adjectival participle may have preceded the predicative use of the participle; for the appositive adjectival participle is common in Anglo-Saxon poetry, while, as Pessels (p. 49) has shown, the predicative participle of the progressive tenses is very rare in Anglo-Saxon poetry, though common in the prose. But the appositive use of the verbal participle, at least of the participle governing a direct object, is most probably of later development in English than the predicative use of the present participle; since the progressive tenses are very common in the works of Alfred (nearly 600 exs., according to Pessels, p. 51), while the appositive participle with a direct object is practically unknown to him (only 18 exs., of which 17 are in direct translation of a Latin appositive participle), and does not become frequent until the time of Ælfric (see Statistics). But we must turn from these speculative questions to matters about which a reasonable degree of certainty is possible.

IV.

In Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle occurs by far most frequently in the nominative case, as is true also in Lithuanian (Delbrück, p. 490) and in Old High German (Mourek). For the representation of the several cases in Anglo-Saxon see the statistics.

The inflexion of the appositive participle is as follows:—

(1) Present:—The nominative singular of all genders has -ende, with these exceptions: -end occurs three times in the masculine (Boeth. 8. 5, Ælfr. L. S. 282. 5, Ælfr. Hept. (Judges) 4. 22), and once in the feminine (Bede1 72. 3); by confusion of inflected infinitive with participle, Benet has -enne for -ende four times (95. 11, 114. 10, 61. 7, all masc.; 98. 6, fem.), -an for -and once (29. 11, masc.), and -endre for -ende once (16. 9); Boeth.1 73. 22 has -inde, m. The GSMN. has
The DSMN. is usually -endum (20 exs.), but is -ende occasionally (7 exs.: 1 in Ælfred, 1 in Benedict, 5 in Ælfric), and
-endan, weak, once (Luke 6. 49). The DSF. is -endre normally (4 exs.), rarely -ende (1 ex.: Ælfric). The ASM. is -endne 21
times, but -ende 28 times (Ælfred 3, Ælfric 8, A.-S. Hom. & L. S. 5, Gospels 6, Poems 6). The ASF. is invariably -ende.
The ASN. is -ende except once (Chron. 656 E: cwæðend). The N. and APMFN. is -ende except twice in Benet (21. 7: be-
cumene for becumende, apm.; 26. 14: stirienda, apn.). The GP. is -endra (14 exs.) except twice in Benet (69. 1: etenda,
78. 12: utgangendre). The DP. is -endum (30 exs.) except twice (Ælfr. de v. et n. Test 5. 34: fairende; A.-S. Hom. &
L. of S. i, 7. 151: ïb.).

(2) Preterite:—The NSMN. is -ed (-od, -ad; -t, ²) for weak and -en for strong verbs. The NSF. is regularly uninflected (64 exs.), being -ed for strong and -en for weak verbs; except twice in Ælfric (Hom. ii, 90: fortredene, weak; L. S. xxiii. B. 524: gedrefedu). The GSMN. is once -es (Chron. 1100 E) and once -ed (Christ 20: forwyrned). The GSF. is -re (2 exs.). The DSMN. is sometimes inflected (-um (-an): 11 exs.: EWS. 7, Gosp. 1, Benet 1, Poems 2), but is oftener not inflected (21 exs.: Ælfred 17, A.-S. Hom. & L. S. 2, Poems 2). The DSF. is occasionally inflected (-re: 4 exs.: Ælfred 1, Ælfric 2, Gosp. 1), but usually not (14 exs.: Bl. Hom. 1, Ælfric 12, A.-S. Hom. & L. S. 1). The ASM. is sometimes inflected (-ne: 47 exs.: Ælfred 10, Ælfric 17, Gosp. 11, Poems 8, Benet 1), sometimes not (33 exs.: Ælfred 1, Ælfric 28, Poems 4). The ASF. is half the time inflected (-e: 18 exs.: Ælfred 3, Ælfric 2, A.-S. Hom. & L. S. 1, Gosp. 1, Wulfst. 1, Poems 10), the other half not (17 exs.: Ælfred 1, Ælfric 6, A.-S. Hom. & L. S. 1, Wulfst. 3,

¹In one of these (Benet 107. 7) the text has -enne for -endne.
²These regular variants of -ed- will not be specified hereafter.
Benet 2, Poems 4). The ASN. is uninflected except in Bede 314. 14 (getrymede, but MS. Ca.: getrymed). The N. and APM. is habitually inflected (-e: over 200 exs., in all the texts), but occasionally not (15 exs.: E. W. S. 4, A.-S. Hom. & L. S. 1, Benet 1, Poems 9). The N. and APF. is invariably inflected (-e 29 exs.; -u 1 ex.: Benet 92. 15, but see note thereon in statistics). The N. and APN. is usually inflected (-e: 24 exs.; -an, weak, 1 ex.: Bede1 182. 23), but is uninflected at times (13 exs.: Ælfred 2, Bened. 1, Poems 10). The GP. is inflected regularly (-ra: 13 exs.) except once in the Chron. (656 E: læred). The DP. is inflected four times (-um), and is uninflected three times (Ælfred 1, Ælfred 2).

It is evident, therefore, that in Anglo-Saxon, especially in Late West Saxon and in the poems, the appositive participle is often not inflected, much oftener indeed than is stated in Sievers’s Angelsächsische Grammatik.3 The same is true of Old High German (Mourek, p. 19; O. Erdmann, Syntax d. Spr. Otfrids, § 355) and of Old Saxon (Pratje, § 156), but not of Gothic (Gering, p. 393).

Again, the inflexion of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon is almost invariably strong. In this sentence from the Blickling Homilies (107. 20: Æa eaðmodan heortan and Æa forhtgendan and Æa bifigendan and Æa owacigendan and Æa ondræwendan heora Scyppend, ne forhogað Æa næfre God ne ne forsyhån), the weak participle, ondræwendan, has an object, and is partly attributive and partly appositive. The sentence illustrates well, I think, the passage of the attributive into the appositive use of the participle; the participle is thrust into post-position because its principal has several participial modifiers, and because the participle itself has a direct object (see section III., above). Sometimes, even in pre-position, the weak participle is strongly appositive, as in Luke 6. 49: He is gelic Æam timbriendan men his hus ofer Æa eorðan = similis est homini aedificanti domum super terram;—Bede1 182. 23: wæs geworden sælte sære seolfan neahle Æa brohton (MS. B.:

In Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle regularly follows its principal (post-position), though occasionally it precedes (pre-position: about 100 exs. in all, of which 8 occur in the Poems). Typical illustrations are: Matthew 8. 25: hy awehton hyne, sus cweðende = suscitaverunt eum, dicentes; Beowulf 1819: we scelidend seccan wyllað, feorran cumene; Beow. 721: Com . . . rinc siðian dreamum bedæled;—Math. 2. 11: gangende into ðam huse, hi gemetton scet cild mid Marian = intrantes domum invenerunt puerum; Beow. 1581: slæpende fræt folces Denigea fyftyne men. It should be added that it is particularly difficult to distinguish between the post-positive attributive and the appositive participle; but what Mourek (p. 44) says of Tatian seems to me true of Anglo-Saxon in general: most post-positive participles are appositive rather than attributive.
CHAPTER I.

STATISTICS OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

Explanatory Note.

With the exception of the glosses and of a few out-of-prints, I have made a statistical reading of the whole of Anglo-Saxon literature and of the more definitely known Latin originals of the prose texts. For a detailed statement, see the bibliography.

Within the respective groups the works are arranged approximately in their chronological order, except the Minor Poems, which are given in their alphabetic order.

For the light that it throws upon Anglo-Saxon and Germanic syntax, the participle with an object is everywhere separated from the participle without an object. Obviously the distinction is of less importance for the preterite than for the present participle. As applied to the present participle, the term object has its usual signification; as applied to the preterite participle, it includes not only the object in the ordinary acceptation, but also any noun modifier of the participle.

To show the inflection of the participle, each case, number, and gender is cited separately. The abbreviations used to designate these are self-explanatory, as nsn. = nominative, singular, neuter, etc. Cases not cited do not occur. "Other examples" are throughout cited in the alphabetic order of the Anglo-Saxon participles. Compound participles are not separated from the simple ones.

For convenience I have not distinguished ǝ and ǝp, but have uniformly used ǝ.
In all of the more definitely known translations the Latin original is given.

I have carefully compared my own statistics with those given in the monographs upon Anglo-Saxon syntax named in the bibliography; and but for the divergent views, already discussed, as to what constitutes an appositive participle, I should give in detail the results of my several collations. However, if the definition given in each treatise is observed, the difference is not great; hence I shall call attention to only the more noteworthy discrepancies disclosed by my collations.

I have tried to make the statistics complete according to the definition given in my Introduction. But, in such a mass of details, occasional omissions and misclassifications are inevitable; I can only hope that they will not prove so numerous or serious as to invalidate this history of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon.

Finally, I trust that these statistics, which at first doubtless appear unnecessarily detailed, may throw some light on several problems not germane to the purpose of this monograph, such as the contested authorship of the Alfredian works; the Anglo-Saxon vocabulary; the relationship of Anglo-Saxon to Latin syntax aside from the use of the participle, etc.;—some of which I hope to take up at another time.

I. IN THE PROSE WORKS.

**BEDE**¹ (180).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (107).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (93).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (58):—

**NSM.** (23):—22. 34: Dæt sum on N. mægðe of déæðe arisende . . . secgende wæs = 303. 24: Ut quidam . . . a
mortuis resurgens ... narraverit; 102. 21 is sægd sæt he beotiende forecwæde = 83. 27: fertur minitans praedixisse.—

Other examples:—8. 19: becumende = 36. 4: perueniens; 24. 3: ib. = 311. 1: venniens; 270. 4: beotiende = 211. 10: minitans; 22. 29; bodiende = 298. 27: praedicans; 12. 11: cumende = 97. 4: venniens; 8. 16: ib. = 33. 21: navigans; 8. 28: ib. = 39. 29: reuersus; 114. 21: fleonde = 92. 24: fugiens; 190. 18: forhtigende = 153. 1: tremens; 62. 13: ge-

feonde = 47. 22: credens; 442. 26: gnorniende = 314. 14: merens; 154. 3: grimsigende = 128. 6: saeuiniens; 204. 17: onhleoniende = 160. 24: in-cumbens; sor-gende = sollicitus, 186. 23 = 150. 29, 268. 7 = 210. 9; sveltende = moriens, 18. 18 = 220. 21 (or attrib. in A.-S.?) and 286. 6 = 221. 3; ib. = moriturus, 24. 5 = 313. 26; 410. 27: svigende = 297. 23: tacitus; 86. 22*: woccende = 60. 28: sciens; 86. 22b: (no)wootende = 61. 1: nesciens (I insert no from MSS. Ca. and O.).

NSF. (3):—332. 2: ọreō & ọrīttig ẹm ọrestum heo wēllicē gefylde in weoruldhade drohtyende = 252. 23: xxxiIII primos in saeculari habitu nobilissime conver-sata compleuit.—


NSN. (1):—86. 10: mid ñy sæt mood ñis ne wootende arefneð = 60. 7: quia hanc animum nescientem pertulisse.

NSM. or F. (2):—240. 26: wol ... grimsigende = 192. 4: desaeuiniens; 264. 25: ingongende = 208. 25: egressa (the two preceding nouns are ña stefn and ñone sang. Of ingressa the subject is vox).

NPM. (8):—252. 2a*b: se b. and heora laereowas gefeonde and blissigende ham hwurson = 200. 7: sacerdotes, doctor-esque ... rediere laetantes.—Other examples:—310. 1: feohtende = 238. 19: compugnantes; 284. 15: forhtyende = 220. 5: tremesfactae; 312. 2: ondettende = 239. 24: professi;

1 In this text the superior letters distinguish different examples in the same line.
54. 4: sarigende = 32. 33: dolentes; 438. 30: sittende = 312. 11: residens; 186. 9: sorgiende = 150. 13: solliciti.
NPN (1) = 158. 27: sider gfreonde coman ... folc Godes word to gehyranne = 132. 20: confluebant ad audiendum verbum populi gaudentes (or pred.).
NDM. (2) = 430. 27: hwerfende = 308. 7: reuersi; 424. 20: suigiende = 304. 30: tacentes.
GPN. (1) = 104. 18: seo is monigra folca ceapstow of londe and of se cumendra = 85. 11: ... populorum terra marique venuientium.
DSM. (3) = 316. 18: swa swa me seolsum frinendum ... W. segrde = 343. 12: sicut mihimet seiscianti ... W. referebat.—Other examples: 382. 22: biddendum = 280. 12: roganti (or attrib.?); 330. 14: taltriendum = 251. 34: periclantil.
DSF. (1) = 288. 34: swa swa heo to hire lifigendre spræce, bæd sæt, etc. = 223. 5: quasi viventem adlocuta, rogavit.
ASM. (3) = 228. 19: he eorre ðone cyning liggende gehran mid ðære gyrd = 174. 6: Iratus autem tetigit Regem iacentem.—Other examples:—312. 27b: forðleorendne = 240. 22: procedentem; 270. 22: lifigende (MS. Ca.: lifigendne) = 211. 30: in carne manentem.
ASN. (2) = 140. 12: he noht elles dyde ... ðon sæt cumende Cristes folc ðider of eallum tunum ... mid godcundre lare timbrede = 115. 4: nil aliud ageret quam confluentem eo ... plebem C. ... verbo instruere; 412. 13: liegende = 298. 9: iacentem.
APM. (2) = 276. 12: licade us efencuman æfter ðeawe arwyrdrehta smeagende bi ðæm, etc. = 215. 1: placuit conuenire nos, ... tractaturos de, etc.; 10. 29: hwylc wracu bi forhogiende æfterfyligde = 81. 8: quaeue illos sperentes
ultio secuta est. [Miller and Smith have *him forhogiende*, in which case *forhogiende* would be a "crude" dative plural; but it seems preferable to read *hi forhogiende*, the variant given by Miller and Schipper, which corresponds better with the Latin. Though Miller apparently so translates, *him* could scarcely be the object of *forhogiende*, since according to Wülfsing (p. 186) this verb governs the accusative only.]


2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually in immediate connection with an appositive participle (5):

NSM. (3):—160. 15: he ða gifeonde ðearfum rehte and sealde = 135. 28: Cuncta . . . mox hauperibus . . . erogare gaudebat (cf. *gfeonde = gaudentes* in 158. 27 = 132. 20, etc.).—Other examples:—88. 17: *ggiende* & *geomriende* cwseft = 61. 25: *gemebat* dicens.


3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (20):

NSM. (16):—22. 17: Æt he his preosta ænne . . . gebiddende & bletsigende fram deaðe gecyrde = 289. 4: orando ac benedicendo a morte reuocauerit.—Other examples:—348. 25: *bebeodende* = 262. 18: commendando; 270. 34: dulendi = 212. 11: errando; 346. 3: eodorecende = 260. 31: ruminando; 246. 25: *gongende* = 195. 21: incedendo; gebiddende = orando, 8. 23 = 37. 5, 12. 10 = 63. 26, 16. 2 = 158. 27, 20. 29 = 271. 3, 22. 7 = 281. 2, 22. 11 = 285. 1, 22. 14 = 288. 1; ib. = benedicendo, 22. 9
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 159

= 282. 30; 246. 25*: ridende = 195. 21*: equitando; 348. 24: signiende = 262. 17: signando.

NSF. (2):—72. 3*: dætte oft [cirice is to be supplied from earlier part of sentence] dæt wiðerworde yfel abeorende and ældend (MS. O.: yldende) beweræ = 51. 29, 30: ut saepe malum quod aduersatur portando et dissipulando compescat.

NPM. (1):—72. 9: ða ðe him ne ondrædað weotonde syngian = 52. 1: qui non metuunt sciendo peccare.

ASM. (1):—22. 16*: Æt he his preosta ænne of horse fallende & gebrysedne gelice gebiddende & blestigende fram deaðe gecyrde = 289. 4*: Ut clericum suum cadendo contributum, aeque orando ac benedicendo a morte renuocauerit.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):—

NSM. (1):—204. 3: he ... on ðære styðe stondende forðerde = 160. 5: ... adclinis destinae ... spiritum, uitae exhalaret ultimum.

NPM. (1):—54. 5: sume forhtiende on eðle gebidon = 33. 1: alii perstantes in patria trepidi ... agebant.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):—

NSM. (1):—142. 8: sægde he ðæt he hine cneohæt weosende gesawe = 116. 12: et se in pueritia vidisse testabatur. [hine here stands for here, 'sanctuary.']—Cf. Bede 188. 1: in ðæm myn stre ... in ðæm cneohætweosendum ðis hælo wunder geworden wæs = 151. 15: in eodem monasterio ... in quo tunc pueró factum erat hoc miraculum sanitatis, in which cneohætweosendum is perhaps a substantive. Cf. further Widsið 39; Beow. 46, 372, 535, 1187.]

6. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adverb (2):—

NSM. (1):—38. 1: ða ... he ealle ða witu ... geðyldelice and geþeondæ for Drihtne abær and ærænde = 20. 1: Qui ... patienter hæc pro Domino immo gaudenter ferebat. [Perhaps it is better to consider geþeondæ here as a pure adverb.]
NPM. (1):—310. 30: ḃas we seondon arfaestlice fyligende & rihtwuldriende = 239. 23: Hos itaque sequentes nos pie atque orthodoxe. [Pure adverb? Cf. 310. 25: we wæron smeagende rehtne geleasian & rehtwuldriende = 239. 17: fidem rectam & orthodoxam exposuimus, where rehtwuldriende is an adjective.]

7. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin future infinitive (2):

NPM. (2):—266. 32ς & բ: รกeter seofon dagum heo eft huweor-fende & cumende me gehehton; ḃ me ḃonne mid him læadan woldon = 209. 34: se redituros, ac me secum adducturos esse promiserunt.

8. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (3):

NSM. (1):—464. 16: gefeonde ḃa heofoulican rico gestah & gesohht = 330. 1: no Latin correspondent.

NPM. (1):—100. 12: ḃa ondetton eac Brettas scomiende ḃæt heo ongeton = 82. 14: Tum Brettones confitentur quidem intellexisse se.

ASM. (1):—214. 32: ḃa gegreopon ḃa unclænan gastas ænne of ḃam monnum ḃe heo in ḃæm fyre bærndon and ḃræston ḃ wyrporn swa beornendne on hine & he gehran his sculdra ḃ his ceacan ḃ hine swa förbærndon = 166. 26: arripientes inmundi spiritus unum de eis, quos in ignibus torrebant, iactaverunt in eum, et contingentes humerum maxillamque eius incenderunt.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (14).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (14):

NSM. (8):—378. 25: he mid ḃy mæstan gewinne mid his cryce hine wreðigende ham becom [MS. B.: hine gewreðede & ham becom] = 278. 15: maximo cum labore baculo innitens domum peruenit. Cf. 380. 7: his leomo mid his cryce wreðigende code in cyrican [MS. B.: gewreðede &
eode] = 278. 27: artus baculo sustentans intruit ecclesiam. —
14. 4: Dæt se yle cyning biddende . . . biscope onfeng
Aidanum on naman gehatenne = 131. 4: Ut . . . rex postu-
lans antistitem . . . acceperit Aidanum. Cf. 10. 12: andsware
biddende onfeng = 48. 2: responsa petens acceperit. —10. 7:
and swa . . . G. word bodigende on Cent eode = 44. 25: sic
ongan, swa he eft for intingan ñære godecundan lufan lust-
fulliende ñam ecum medium fæstlice forfæste = 264. 12:
quad . . . iam causa diuini amoris delectatus praemiis inde-
fessus agebat. —450. 20: mid ðy he wæs godre gleanesse
eïht ð he ña yldo mid ñeawum oferstigende [MS. B.: wæs
oferstigende] & he swa gemetfæstlice & swa ymbsceawiendlice
hine sylfne on callum ñingum beheold ñæt = 322. 27: atque
aetatem moribus transiens, ita . . . gereret ut (or pred. ?). —
16. 8: Dæt se . . . b. onfonde . . . sume stowe mynster on to
timbrianne, & ña mid halgum gebedum & fæstenum Drihtne
gehalgode = 174. 22: Ut idem episcopus locum . . . accipiens
Domino consecraverit.

NPM. (3): —312. 23 & b: we wuldiræs usserne D. swa swa
ñas wuldrædon . . . noht toetecende oððe onweg ateonde =
240. 18 & b: glorificamus D. sicut . . . nihil addentes uel sub-
trahentes. —312. 25: ña ðe heo onfengon we eac swelce onfoð
. . . wuldræde God Fæder, etc. = 240. 20: suscepimus,
glorificantes Deum, etc.

GSN. (1): —426. 30: gehled & ceahetunge swa swa unge-
læredes folces & biosmriendes gehæftum heora feondum =
306. 10: cachinum crepitantem quasi uulgi indocti captis
hostibus insultantis.

APM. (2): —54. 31: sende munecas mid hine Drihten
ondredende = 42. 21: misit monachos timentes Dominum. —
358. 10: Ac forðon ðe he ne wolde ðy ærran geare gehyran
ðone arwyrðan fæder Ægberht, ðæt he Scoettas hine noht
seeðounder ne afuhte = 267. 7: sed quoniam noluerat audire
E., ne Scottiam nil se ledentem impugnaret.
Note.—In Bede\(^1\) 430. 18 (in àære ic eac swylye ña swetestan stæfnê geherde Godes lôf singendra = 307. 31 : in qua etiam uoœm cantantium dulcissimam audîui) we have a substantiviated participle with an object.

B.—The Preterite Participle (73).

I. Without Object (60).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (47):—

NSM. (14):—318. 1: ñæt ... lichoma bebyrged brosnian ne meahte = 243. 24: seputa caro corrumpi non potuit.—

Other examples:—400. 25: bewrigen = 290. 15: obtectus; 396. 20: forðfered = 288. 9: deponentus; 442. 22: ge-eadmoded = 314. 10: humilitatus; 8. 23\(^a\): gehæfd [MS. B.: wæs gehæfd] = 37. 5: detentus; 442. 23: genîðerad = 314. 12: damnatus;—geseted = positus, 20. 27 = 268. 20 & 444. 5 = 314. 21; 10. 10: geworden = 48. 1: factus; 260. 7: haten = 205. 28: iussus; 278. 18\(^b\): ib. = 216. 16\(^b\): invitatus; 92. 17: oferswîðed = 71. 23: uictus; 352. 13: onbryrðed = 264. 11: conpunctus; 278. 18\(^a\): onfongen = 216. 16\(^a\): susceptus.

NSF. (4):—330. 30: heo of eordan alæded leorde ñy fifteogedan dæge = 252. 20: de terris ablata transiuit.—


NSN. (1):—78. 15: wiif in blodes flownnesse geseted = 52. 1: in fluxu posita; ib. 78. 28 = 56. 5.

NS. M. or N. (1):—150. 13: ... mæl & cælic ... gehal-gad = 126. 9: calicem ... consercatum.

NS. N. or F. (1):—262. 22: wæl & monewild gesended = 207. 21: clades missa.

NPM. (7):—164. 7: ðaðæt heo styccemælum aafeädde ... beboda onfon meahte (MS. Ca.: mihten) = 137. 17:
donec paulatim ennutriti ... ad capienda ... praecepta sufficienter.—Other examples:—202. 20: afyrhte = 159. 21: territi; 160. 26: bescorene = 136. 10: adtonsi; 234. 1: forðferde (MS. Ca.: forðferende)= 176. 30: morientes; 8. 5: genedde = 29. 12: coacti; 58. 24: gewelgade = 45. 33: praediti; 310. 2: togotene = 238. 22: refusi.

NPN. (2) = 140. 3: wær on eac gefulwade oðer his bearn of A. sære cwene acende = 114. 25: Baptizati sunt alii liberii eius de A. progeniti.—182. 23: væs geworden sæte sære seolfan neahte sæ brohton (MS. B.: gebrohtan) ban ute awunedon = 148. 17: factum est ut ... reliquiae adlatae foris permanerent (may be attrib.).

DSF. (1) = 320. 7: cwomon heo to sumre ceastre gehrownre noht for ðonon = 245. 1: uenerunt ad ciuitatulam quondam desolatam, non procul inde sitam.

DSN. (1) = 338. 32: in odrum mynstre fyrr gesetum = 257. 2: in alio longius positum monasterio.


ASF. (3) = 58. 25a & b: Bærøn ... anlicnesse Drihtnes Hældenes on brede afægde and awritene = 46. 2: sær ðerentes ... imaginem ... in tabula depitam; 484. 28: geðydde = 359. 29: adiectum.

ASN. (3) = 122. 12: Hæfde he ... twiege handseax geætred = 99. 3: qui habebat sicam bicipitem toxicatam.—Other examples:—106. 7: gehalgod = 86. 12: dedicatum; 314. 14: priuilegium of sære apostolican aldorlicnesse getrymede (MS. Ca.: getrymed) = 241. 14: ... epistulam priuilegii
ex auctoritate apostolica firmatam (getrymede due to close following of firmatam?).  
APM. (1):—296. 7: Geselah he ... ðry waepnedmen to him cuman mid beorhtum hraeglum gegyrede = 226. 21: Uidit enim ... tres ad se uenisse uiros claro indutos habitu.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin predicative participle (1):—  
NSN. (1):—272. 6: Ís ofer his byrgenne stowe treogweorc on gelicnesse medmicles huses geworht, mid hrægle gegywed = 212. 17: Est autem locus idem sepuleri tumba lignea in modum domunculi facta co-opertus.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (3):—  
NSM. (3):—342. 4a & b: In ... mynstre wæs sum broðor syndriglice mid godeundre gifæ gemæred j gewœorðad = 258. 28: In m. fuit frater quidam diuina gratia specialiter insignis; 88. 25: geneded = 62. 2: invitus.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):—  
NSM. (1):—16. 15: Ðæt E. se halga wer of Angelcynnes cynne acenned munuclif wæs lædende on Hibernia = 191. 26: Ut E., uir sanctus de natione Anglorum, monachicam in H. uitam duxerit.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (8):—  
NSM. (5):—20. 28: Ðæt se wer on ancerlife geseted ... gelædde = 271. 3: Ut idem in uita anachoretica ... produxerit. Tb.: 22. 7a = 281. 2. [Cf. geseted = positus in 20. 27 = 268. 20, 444. 5 = 314. 21.]—Other examples:— 114. 14: geswenced & werig [MSS. B. & C.: wæs] = 92. 17; 258. 28: haten (‘called’) = 205. 15; 434. 24: haten (‘called’) = 310. 6.

ASM. (1):—14. 5: Ðæt se ylca cyning biddende ... biscope (MS. B.: bysceop) onfeng Aidanum on naman gehatenne = 131. 4: Ut idem rex postulans antistitem ... acceperit Aidanum. [Cf. 158. 12: him bispoc sendon, Aidan
II. WITH AN OBJECT (13).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (12):—

NSM. (3):—214. 11: eft onlysed ðy lichoman byrneð = 166. 4: ita solutus corpore ardebit.—Other examples:—478. 1: eldo fornumen = 349. 29: consumtus aetate; 440. 20: witum underœoded = 313. 3: pennis subditus.

NSF. (1):—332. 16: Forson ðe . . . Hereswið . . . regollicum ðedscipum underœoded, baad ðone ecan sige = 253. 10: Nam H. . . regularibus subditâ disciplinis expectabat.

GSF. (1):—172. 26: Ðisse fæmnan Gode gehalgodre monige weorc . . . gewuniað . . . sægd beon = 143. 1: Huius autem uriginis Deo dicatae solent, etc.

GPF. (1):—284. 32: in ðara fæmnena mynstre Gode gehalgodra = 220. 26: in uriginum Deo dedicatarum cella.

DSM. (1):—16. 12: Se cyning for ðam sige sealdan him . . . sealde, etc. = 129. 11: pro adepta victoria . . . dederit.

DPF. (1):—14. 15: be E. and A. Gode gehalgedum fænum = 142. 2: de E. and Æ., sacratis Deo urginibus.

DPN. (1):—24. 22: mid him ðam underœoddum mynstrum = 346. 14: cum subjectis sibi monasteriis (or attrib.?).

ASF. (1):—232. 2: ne ðonne nemne medmicel dæl hlafes and an henne æg mid litle meolc wætren gemengede he onfeng = 175. 30: cum paruo lacte aqua mixto percipiebat.

ASN. (1):—344. 28: ðy betstan leoðe geglenged him asong
and ageaf, sæt him beboden wæs = 260. 24: optimo carmine, quod iubebatur, conpositum reddidit.

APN. (1):—212. 23: Gesæah he eac feower fyr onæled on sæere lyfte noht micle fæce between him tosceaden = 165. 20: . . . quatuor ignes . . . non multo . . . spatio distantès.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerundive (1):

NSF. (1):—236. 29: Ḟa eode seo . . . dohtor . . . Gode gehalgod in sæt mynster = 179. 1: Intrœuat filia Deo dedicanda monasterium.

**BOETHIUS**¹ (27).

**A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (17).**

**I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (17).**

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):

NSM. (1):—14. 16: se broc, ðeah he swife of his rihtynæ, ðonne¹ sær micel stan weilwiende of ðam heohan munte oninnan feal& hine todæl& him his rihtynæ wiðstænt = 23. 16: Quique uagatur montibus altis defluus amnis, sepe resistit rupe solutæ obice saxi.

NSF. (1):—81. 27: Swa ðu gesceope ða saule sæt hio seolde ealne weg hwearfan on hire selfræ, swa swa eall ðæs rodor hwerfð, oððe swa swa hweol onhwerfð, smeagende ýmby hire sceoppænd oððe ýmbe hi selfe = 71. 13: Tu triplicis medium naturæ cunctæ moventem conectens animam per consona membra resoluis. Quæ cum secta duos motum glomeravit in orbes, in semet reditura meat mentemque profundam circuit et similis convertit imagine caelum.

2. The A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which verb is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (1):

¹I have expanded the contractions of this text.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 167

NPM. (1):—108. 14: irnað hidres ǣdres dwoligende under ǣm hrofe callra gesceafa = 93. 78: sed circa ipsam rerum summam uerticemque deficiunt nec in eo miseris contingit effectus quod solum dies noctesque moliuntur.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the ablative (2):—
NSM. (2):—8. 8t&2: wepende & gisciende = 3. 2: fletibus.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds loosely to a Latin substantive in the nominative (1):—
NPM. (1):—74. 31: dwoliende = 67. 9: error etc.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):—
NSM. (2):—8. 15: geomriende asungen hæfde = 4. 2: querimoniam lacrimabilem; 8. 6: ic seal nu hœfiende singan = 3. 1: flebilis.

6. The A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (9):—
NSM. (9):—3. 7: Hu B. hine singende gebæd; singende eawæð: 9. 29, 46. 2, 48. 22, 60. 27, 71. 4, 8. 5 (singend—), 73. 22 (singinde—); 17. 14: sorgiende anforlete.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (10).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (10).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (3):—
GPM. and N. (2):—11. 27, 28: Ne me na ne lyst mid glase geworhtra (or attrib.? ) waga ne heahsetla mid golde & mid gimmum gerenodra = 19. 21: ... comptos ebose ac uitro parietes.
ASN. (1):—133. 22: God seleð ægðer ge good ge yfel gemenged = 112. 140: mixta.

NS. F. or N. (1):—91. 8: wuht... ðe ungened lyste forweordan = 78. 45: nullis cogentibus.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb (1):

NSM. (1):—46. 27: se nama mid feaum stafum awritten = 47. 17: signat nomen literis.


NP. F. or N. (1):—100. 22: gesceasta hiora agnum willum ungenedde him weren underðiodde = 83. 47: voluntaria sponte.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (4):

NSN. (1):—131. 27: gemenged = 111. 96 (cf. 133. 22: gemenged = 112. 140: mixta).

NPM. (2):—30. 25, 26: ðonne sint hi ðe pliolican & geswincfulran hæfd ðonne naefd.

GPF. (1):—11. 28: boca mid golde awrittenra = 19. 21 (an ap. ptc. occurs in the Latin of this sentence, but not corresponding to awrittenra).

II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

GREGORY¹ (82).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (58).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT. (56).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (9):

NSM. (2):—261. 11: Se ilca suigende gelæfode swingellan = 196¹: tacitus flagella toleravit; 225. 22; ðeahÆigende = 170ª: retractantes.

¹In this text a refers to the top and b to the bottom of the page.
THE APPosITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 169

NSN. (1):—431. 18: Swa bið sæt mod slæpende gewundad swa hit ne gefret, ðonne etc. = 356*: Mens quippe a cura suae sollicitudinis dormiens verberatur et non dolet, quia etc.

NPM. (3):—405. 31: Ac æa hie wendon hiera bæc to him, æa hi ofermodiende his gebod förhodon = 326*: superbiens ejus jussa contemsit.—Other examples:—259. 19: suigende = 196*: taciti; 171. 9: surhwuniende = 126*: inhaerentes.

DSM. (2):—93. 9: Hit is gecueden sæt se sacerd scolde sweltan, gif se sweg nære of him gehiered ge utgongendum = 62b: Sacerdos namque ingrediens vel egrediens moritur, se de eo sonitus non auditor.

ASM. (1):—399. 14: Sio Segor gehælde Loth fleondne = 318*: Segor civitas, quae fugientem salvet infirnum.

Note.—In 159. 18 (sæt hi ðonne gehieran þreagende of ðæs lariowes muðe hu micle byrðenne hie habbað on hiera scyldum = 116*: ut cum culpa ab auctore non cognoscitur, quanti sit ponderis, ab increpantis ore sentiatror) þreagende, as Cosijn suggests (vol. 2, p. 97), is doubtless used adverbially. We should expect the genitive, þreagendes, to agree with lariowes. Compare the use of þreatigende in 315. 23, etc.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb either is subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle that has been turned into an A.-S. finite verb (6):

NSM. (5):—93. 6: Hit is awritten sæt he scolde inn-gongende & utgongende beforan Gode to ðam halignessum beon gehiered his sug, ðylæs he swulte = 62b: Scriptum quippe est: "Ut audiatur sonitus, quando ingreditur et egreditur sanctuarium in conspectu Domini, et non moriatur."—151. 24: he hit him ðeah suigende gesæde = 110*: et hoc ipsum tamen, quia tacuerit, dixit. [Just before this, however, occurs tacens et quasi non videns].—369. 4: siofigende cwæð = 286*: queritur dicens.—315. 23: þreatigende cwæð = 244*: redarguit dicens.

NPM. (1):—215. 7: unwillende = 162*: quae non ap- tunt.
3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (18):

NSM. (13):—101. 14: & eft hine selfe ofdune astiggende he cuðe gemetgian his hieremo[n]num $= 70^a$: quia noverat eundem se auditoribus condescendendo temperare.—379. 19: sætte he cac cígende & lærende oðre ðider tio & laðige ðider he getogen bið $= 294^b$: Ut... illuc etiam clamando alios quo ipse rapitur trahat.—Other examples:—27. 21: gēðafíende $= 8^a$: permittendo; 127. 6: oliccende $= 88^b$: demulcendo; 49. 20 and 81. 10: sprecende $= 26^b$ and 54*: loquendo; 123. 21: stírende $= 86^a$: corrigendo; 127. 7: særealigende $= 88^b$: terrendo; 383. 8: ib. $= 298^a$: increpando; 295. 12 and 297. 15: wandigende $= 222^b$ and 224*: parcendo; 81. 11: wyrcende $= 54^a$: ostendendo.

NSN. (1):—433. 6: sæt is sæt hit [mod] sa gedonan unðeawas swincende gebete, & sa ungedonan foreðoncelice becierre $= 358^a$: ut et praesentia laborando subjiciat, et contra futura certamina prospeiciendo convalescat.


4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the genitive (1):—

NPM. (1):—191. 4: sæt hie wel libben[de] gode bisene astellen sæm ðe him underðiedde sien $= 142^a$: discant... isti quomodo etiam commissis sibi exempla bene vivendi exterius praebant.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (7):—

NSM. (4):—397. 27, 28: Ne cweðo ic no sæt sæt ic ær cweð beboedende, ac lærende & gēðafígende $= 316^a$: Hoc autem dico secundum indulgentiam non secundum imperium; 253. 6: geomríende $= 192^a$: in dolore.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 171

NSN. (1):—417. 11: geðafigende = 338b: *ex delibertione.
NPM. (2):—415. 6: Wuton cuman ær his dome andet-
tende (or pred.? = 336*: Praeveniamus faciem Domini in
confessione; 123. 16: weaxende = 286*: ad interitum.

6. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
 substantive in the ablative of manner or of means (6):——

NSM. (4):—415. 18: & he ða hi swa unrote oleccende
to him geloccode = 336b: tristemque blanditiis delinivit.—
Other examples:—53. 16: egesiende = 30*: terroribus; 53.
16: hiertende = 30*: favoribus; 379. 23: hreowsigende =
294b: magna voce penitentiae.

NPM. (2):—185. 7: is cynn ðætte we for hira modes helo
olicende hi on smyltnesse gebringen mid ure spræce = 138a:
dignum est, ut ad salutem mentis quasi dulcedine citharae
locutionis nostrae tranquilitate revocetur; 117. 17: suigende
= 82*: tacita cogitatione.

7. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
adverb (1):——

NPM. (1):—381. 25: . . . Godes ðegnas, ða ðe unwandi-
ende ðara scyldegena gyltas ofslogen = 296b: qui delinquen-
tium scelera incunctanter ferirent (or pure adverb?).
8. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
infinite (3):——

NSM. (2):—403. 6: Fordæm se ðe hine selfne maran
godes behæt, & ðonne forlaet ða maran god, & went hine to
ðæm læssum, ðonne bið hit swutol ðæt he bið fromlociende
oferswiðed = 322*: Iui igitur fortiori studio intenderat, retro
convincitur respicere, si relictis amplioribus bonis adminima
retorquetur.—61. 3: Se læce bið micles to beald & to scom-
leas ðe gæð æfter oðra monna husum læcnigende (or pred.?),
& heefð on his agnum nebbe opene wunde unlacenode = 36a:
Si ergo adhuc in ejus opere passiones vivunt, qua præsumtione
percussum mederi proprat, qui in facie vulnus portat?

NPM. (1):—297. 4: Sua, ðonne ðonne hatheortan hie
mid nane ðoreðone nyllað gestillan, ac sua wedende folgiað
hwam sua sua Assael dyde Æfnere, & næfre nyllað gesuican,
Sonne is micel sær etc. = 224*: Sed cum iracundi nulla consideratione se mitigant, et quasi Asael persequi et insanire non cessant; necesse est etc.


NSM. (1):—207. 22: Förðæm he spræc ðæs word ðæ he wolde ðæra scamleasna scylde telende geopenian = 156*: ut et illorum culpas increpation durë detegeret.

10. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (3):

NSM. (3):—185. 9: æresð mon sceal sprecan asciende.—153. 5: Ac ðonne se lareow ieldende secð ðone timan etc.—39. 16: suigende he cwæð.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (2).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):

NSM. (1):—99. 4: & sæte hie [Cotton MS.: he] sua healicra ðinga wilnigende ne forsió his niehstan untrume & sceyldige = 68*: ne aut alta petens proximorum infirma despicat.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (1):

NPM. (1):—171. 13: Æt is ðonne Æt mon ða earce bere on ðæm saglum, Ætte ða godan lareowas ða halgan gesomnunge larende ða niwan & ða ungeleaffulan mod mid hire lare geleðe [sic!] to ryhtum geleafan = 126*: Vëctibus quippe aream portare, est bonis doctoribus sanctam Ecclesiam ad rudes infidelium mentes praedicando deducere. [Cotton MS. has beoð lærende.]


I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (23).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (11):—
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 173

NSM. (4):—443. 22: Ac ða he swa gebreged on eorðan feoll, & acsode, & cwæð etc. = 370. Nam cum prostratus, requireret, dicens.—Other examples:—135. 23: gehefegad and ofersuíðed = 96: victam; 51. 1: uncloënsod = 26: non purgatus.

NPF. (1):—153. 1: Ac monige scylda openlice witene beoð to forberanne = 110: Nonnulla autem vel aperte cognita, mature toleranda sunt.

NPN. (2):—245. 8: Hwaet getacniað ȝonne ȝa truman castra butan hwurfulu mod, getrymedu and ymbrymedu mid lytelicre ladunge? = 184: Quid enim per civitates munitas exprimitur, nisi suspectae mentes et fallaci semper defensione circumdatae?

DPM. or N. (1):—155. 10: ȝonne he ongiet be sumum ðingum ȝðe ȝeawum utanne ætievædum eall ðæt hie innan ðenceað = 112: qui discussis quibusdam signis exterius apparentibus ita corda subditorum penetrat ut etc.

ASM. (2):—383. 32: gif mon on niwne we[a][l] unadru-godne & unastiðodne micelne hrof & hefine onsett, ȝonne etc. = 300: quod structuris recentibus needum solidatis si tignorum pondus superponitur etc.

ASN. (1):—403. 20: ðæt hi hit huru tobocen gebeten = 322: bona... saltem scissa resarciant.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (2):—

NPM. (1):—227. 25: ðe... gefeoltað & eft innan hira burgum fæste belocene Ȝurh hiera giemeliste hie lætað gebindan = 172: qui victores sunt, sed per negligentiam postmodum intra urbis claustra capiuntur.

NPF. (1):—407. 30: forðæm gif hie geðenceað ðara gesæða ðe him ungeendum æfær ðæm geswincum becuman sculon = 328: Si enim attendatur felicitas quae sine transitu attingitur.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin ablative of manner or of cause (1):—
NPM. (1):—435. 2: gif hi færlecor syngoden unbedøhte = 360a: si in his sola præcipitatione cecidissent.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin dative of cause (1):—

NPM. (1):—109. 23: Hie sculon forðy ofdræd[de]... liegean astrealte etc. = 76a: quia videlicet etc. ex ea debent etiam formidini jacere substrati.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adverb (2):—

NPM. (2):—117. 23: ... sua ... sua we for monnum orsorglicor ungewitnode syngiað = 82b: Tanto ... quanto apud homines inulte peccamus.—137. 19: Ungeniedde, mid eowrum agenum willan, ge sculon ðenceæan = 98b: non coacte, sed spontanee etc. [Or are both pure adverbs?].

6. An A.-S. appositive participle loosely corresponds to a Latin substantive in the nominative (2):—

NPM. (2):—302. 10: unmidlode and αδυndene = 228b: effrenatio etc.

7. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):—

NSM. (2):—227. 21: & he ðonne sua gebunden ... sargað etc. = 172b: ut plerumque vir patiens ... captivus crubescat; 317. 12: ungeþingod = 244b: repentina (or pure adverb?).

8. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):—

NPM. (1):—105. 1: ... clænran ðonne hie ... wæren, mid ðæm tearum ðara gebeda αδωγεν.

DPF. (1):—343. 8: æhtum gereafodu[m].

II. WITH AN OBJECT (1).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the accusative (1):—

ASM. (1):—197. 20: hit no gedæfenlic nære ðæt hie slogon Gode gehalgodne kyning = 148a: fregit eos responsi-
onibus, quia manum mittere in Christum Domini non deberet (or attrib.?).

**OROSIUS** (21).

**A—The Present Participle (16).**

I. Without an Object (14).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (4):

   NSM. (2):—200. 32: he him *wepende* (sære bene) getygdade, for *don he* (he) secolde Italiam forlæatan = 201. 30: *fleus* reliquit Italiam; 240. 9: *wepende* mænde *da unare* = 241. 8: *deplorans* injurias.

   NSF. (2):—12. 32, 33: & *sonne* for*sonan* west *irnende* heo tolið on twa ymb an igland *se* mon hæt Meroen, & *sonan nor* bugende ut on *fone* Wendelsæ = 13. 20, 22: deinde diu ad occasum *profuens*, faciensque insulam nomine Meroen in medio sui: novissime ad septentrionem *inflexus* . . . plana Ægypti rigat.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive (2):

   NSM. or N. (2):—166. 17, 18: *ægðer* ge he(self) *wepende* hamweard for, ge *sæt* sole *sæt* him ongean com, call hit him *wepende* hamweard folgade = 167. 8: . . . ad cujus conspectum *plangentium* junguntur agmina.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):

   NSM. (2):—294. 11: *hiene* siððan mid rapum be *sæm* sweoran up aheng, gelicost *sæm* *de* he hiene self(ne) unwitende hæfde awierged = 295. 8: strangulatus, atque ut *voluntariam* sibi conscivisse mortem putaretur, laqueo suspensus est (notice the mistranslation); 40. 18: *fleonde* = 41. 16: *profugum*.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (6):—
II. WITH AN OBJECT (2).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):

NPM. (1) — 32. 21: geforan Roðum sæt igland, wilniende sæt hi sæcum gewinne oðhogen hæfdon = 33. 19: credentes quod se . . . abstraherent, Rhodom insulam . . . ceperunt.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (1):

NSM. (1) — 52. 27: sona Ææs folces Æone næstan dél fleonde mid ealle forlædde [dæl seems to be the object of forlædde as well as of fleonde].

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (5).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (5).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):

NPF. (1) — 14. 18: Ææs landes is xliii [sic] Æoda, wide tosetene for unwæstmbærnesse Ææs londes = 15. 20: gentes sunt quadraginta duae, propter terrarum insæcundam diffusionem late oberrantes.

ASN. (1) — 168. 14: swa he hit him eft ham bebead on anum brede awritten etc. = 169. 10: . . . per tabellas scriptas etc.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):

DPF. & M. (1) — 88. 13: Ææfter Ææm wæs an ger full sæt ofer eall Romana rice seo eorðæ wæs cwaciende & berstende & ælce dæge mon com unarimedlice oft to (Ææm) senatum, &
him sædon from burgum & from tunum on eorðan besuncen = 89. 10: Per totum fere annum tam crebri, tamque etiam graves in Italia terrae-motus fuerunt, ut de innumeris quassationibus ac ruinis villarum oppidorumque assiduis Roma nuntiis fatigaretur.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):
   
   NPM. (2):—92. 30: bewopene; 250. 14: ungeniedde.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

   No example.

PSALMS, THORPE (24).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (20).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (7).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):
   
   NSM. (1):—17. 3: herigende ic clypge to ðe, Drihten = laudans invocabo Dominum.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):
   
   NSM. (1):—50 Int. (= Introduction): hrewsiende = Bruce 93: Sub occasione pœnitentiae.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the genitive (2):
   
   NSM. (2):—34 Int.¹²³: ma witgiende, ðonne wyrgende ðe wilniende = Bruce 86: non malevolentia optandi, sed praescientia prophetandi.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the ablative (1):
   
   NSM. (1):—34 Int.³: wyrgende = Bruce 86: malevolentia.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):
   
   NSM. (2):—30 Int.: gebiddende to; 5. 7: hopiende to.
II. With an Object (13).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin absolute clause (1):

\[ \text{NSM. (1):—38 Int.: seofigende = Bruce 87: Angentibus} \]
\[ \ldots \text{mæroribus.} \]


\[ \text{NSM. (1):—34 Int.: siofigende = Bruce 85: Occasione ærumnarum suarum.} \]

3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin equivalent (11):

\[ \text{NSM. (11):—37 Int.: andettende; 28 Int.: bebeodende; 33 Int.: gehatende; 39 Int.: gylpende; 32 Int.: herigende (cf. 17.3, where herigende = laudans); 47 Int.: mycliende; 37 Int.: seofigende, ib. 43 Int.; 32 Int.: ñanciende, ib. 45 Int.; 31 Int.: wundriende.} \]

B.—The Preterite Participle (4).

I. Without an Object (4).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):

\[ \text{APF. (2):—44. 15: beslepte and gegyrede = circumamicta.} \]

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):

\[ \text{ASN. (1):—20. 3: astæned = de lapide.} \]

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (1):

\[ \text{DSN. (1):—41 Int.: folce gehœstum etc. = Bruce 89: populus captivus etc.} \]

II. With an Object (0).

No example.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 179

THE CHRONICLE* (46).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (13).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (9).

NSM. (2):—1097 Eᵃᵇᵇ (p. 233ᵇ): Da uppon sancte Michaels mæssan iiiiiN° October ætywde an selcuð steorra on æsen sceynende & sona to setle gangende (or pred.).

NPM. (7):—1069 Dᵃᵇᵉ (p. 204ᵐ): & heom com ñær togenes Eadgar cild & Waldðeof eorl & Mærleswegen & Gospatic eorl mid Norðymbrum & ealle ña land leoden ridende & gangende (or both pred.) mid unmaetan here swiðe fægengende & swa calle anrædllice to Eoferwic foron.—1075 Dᵃᵇ (p. 210ᵐ): ac he sylf & his ferestan menn ferdon eft ongean to Scotlande, sume hreowlice on fotan gangende & sume earmllice ridende (or both pred.?).—1123 E (p. 251¹): & riden ñær spreckende (or pred.?). Da asëh dune se biscop etc.—1086 Eᵃ (p. 218ᵇ): & twegen halige menn ñe hyrsunamedon Gode on ancersettle wuniende ñær wæron forbearnde.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (4).

NSM. (1):—1087 E (p. 223ᵐ): ðas ñing geseonede se arwurða biscop Wlstan weard swiðe gedrefed on his mode.

NPM. (1):—1083 E: & sume crupon under & gyrne cleopedon to Gode, his miltsse biddende.

ASN. (2):—656 Eᵇ (p. 33ᵇ): seo papa seonde ña his writ, ñus cwæðende: ñc ñtalianus papa etc.—Cf. 675 E (p. 35ᵇ): And seo papa seonde ña his gewrite to Englalande, ñus cwæðende.

Note: Latin Participles in The Chronicle.—Several instances of a Latin appositive participle occur in the Chronicle but are not translated into A.-S.: 431 E: apparens; 625 E: constans.

*The superior letters outside the parenthesis distinguish the several examples of the same year; those inside the parenthesis are explained by Plummer.
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (33).

1. Without an Object (33).

NSM. (12):—1104 E (p. 239b): on ðam Tiwæsdæge ðær æfter ætywdan feower circulas to ðam middæge onbutan ðære sunnan hwites hwæs, ælc under oðran gebroiden swyle hir gemetet wæron.—50 F: Her Paulus gebunden wearð gesend to Rome (or pred.).—755 F: & Sibertes broðer, Cynehard gehaten, ofþloþ Cynewulf on Merantune. So: 604 A (or pred.?), 777 E, 1130 E.—Other examples:—1118 E and 1127 Eb: gewundod; 1154 E: luued (or post-positive attrib.?); 3 A: ofsticod; 1086 Eb: ungedered (or pred.?); 1048 E: unwivicican (or pred.).

NSN. (1):—1127 Es (p. 256b): ðær wæs se Scotte kyng Dauid & eall ða heaued læred & læued ðæt wæs on England. [May be considered plural as by Plummer.]

NPM. (15):—1066 Da,b,c (p. 199m): ða Engliscan hi hindan hetelicæ slogon oð ðæt hig sume to scype coman, sume adruncen & sume eac forberende & swa mislice forfarenæ, ðæt ðær wæs lyt to lafe.—Other examples:—gehadode: 995 F, 1012 E, 1095 E, 1102 E; 449 A: geleândede; 1083 E*: gewepnedod (or pred.?); hadodod: 1014 E, 1023 D, 1046 E (manig mann ðæto ge hadode ge læwedæ); 1096 E: hungerbitene; 911 A: unbesohtene (or pred.?); 1070 E: wepnode.

GSM. (1):—1100 E (p. 235b): ælces mannes gehadodes & læwedæs.

GPM. (1):—656 Es (p. 29b): be his broðre ræd . . . & be al his gewiten ræd, læred & læwed, æ on his kynerice wæræn.

DSM. (1):—1053 Ce: se Wulfwi feng to ðam biscoprice ðæ Ulf hæfde be him libbendum & ofadæxidum.

ASN. (2):—992 Es,a,b: & ðæt scip genamon eall geæpnod & gewæçod.

II. With an Object (0).

No example.
Note.—As the examples show, in many instances the participles (both present and preterite) above cited from the Chronicle are in immediate juxtaposition with intransitive verbs like ætiewan and faran; hence even more examples than those queried may be predicative rather than appositive.

**THE LAWS (19).**

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (4).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (3).

ASM. (1) :—Ine, c. 35: Se ðe ðeof slihð, he mot aðe ge-
cyan, ðæt he hine fleomdne for ðeof sloge.

ASN. (2) :—Cnut II., c. 24, Int.Æåb: nan ðinge ... ne
libbende ne liegendæ.

Note: Accusative Compounds.—Three accusative-compound participles occur in the Laws :—Ine, c. 45: Burg-bryce mon
seal betan ... gesiðcundes monnes landhebbendes xxxv;
and Ine, c. 51Æåb: Gif gesiðcund mon landagende forsitte
fierd, geselle cxx scill. and ðolie his landes; unlandagende
lx scill. As the examples show, however, the participles are
used attributively rather than appositively.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1) :—Wihtræd, c. 18: Preost hine clœnsie sylfís
soðe, in his halgum hraegle ætforan wiofode, ðus cweðende:
"Ueritatem dico Christo, non mentior."

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (15).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (15).

NSM. (1) :—Ine, c. 39: Gif hwa fare unaliefæd fram his
hlaforde (MS. B. has unalýfede, which is perhaps a pure
adverb).
II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

BENEDICT: (72).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (63).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (25).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (12):—

NSM. (3):—2. 18: and Æus acsiende cwyð = 4. 21: Et quaerens Dominus . . . iterum dicit.—Other examples:—
47. 16: arisende = 88. 17: surgentes; 52. 9: wuniende mid upahefednesse = 98. 2: elatus.

NPM. (9):—47. 12: hy butan elcunge arisende cælice gehwylc oðerne forestæppe and to Æam Godes weorce efste = 88. 13: absque mora surgentes festinent.—Other examples:—
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 183

62. 15* : *drincende = 118. 2 : *bibentibus; 62. 15* : *etende =
118. 1 : *comedentibus; 134. 17* : *libbend = 231. 8 : *vi
tantes; 135. 23* : *sittende = 231. 36 : sedentes; 138. 2*:
*surhwuniende = 233. 22 : *persistentes; wuniende (fram) =
remoti, 134. 18* = 231. 11 ; = stantes, 135. 23* = 231. 35 ;
137. 14* : *wyrcende = 233. 6 : *operantes.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or in
immediate connection with an appositive participle (3):—

NSM. (2) :—133. 13 : Swa hwylc swa *onettende efst to
*ham heofonlican *eol, gefreme *erest = 206. 11 : Quisquis
ergo ad patriam cœlestem festinas . . . perfice; 68. 14 : *hreou-
sigende = 128. 20 : *peniteat.

NPM. (1) :—68. 21 : wen is, *æt sume *æsleaclice
lagon and slepon, *æs *sittende mid idere spellunge deofle to
micelne forwyrdes intingan gesalden = 130. 4 : erit forte
talis qui se aut recolloceet et dormiat, aut certe *sedat sibi
foris, vel fabulis vacet, et detur occasio maligno.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
ablative of manner or of means (1) :—

NSM. (1) :—71. 7 : butan he *ærrhihte beforan eallum hine
dædbetende *geææmede = 134. 15 : nisi *satisfactione ibi coram
omnibus humiliatus fuerit.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
adjective (1) :—

NPM. (1) :—9. 23 : *æfre unstaæolfæste and *worende =
16. 9 : semper *vagi et numquam stabiles.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
prepositional phrase (1) :—

NPM. (1) :—9. 7 : geleorniaæ *æt hie *anstandonde . . .
ongean deofol . . . winnan magan = 14. 4 : et beni instructi . . .
jam *sine consolatione alterius . . . contra vitia pugnare
sufficiunt.

*All starred references are to the Appendix of Benedict¹.
6. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (7):

NSM. (4):—31. 14: _geomriende_ clypude = 58. 13; 24. 6: _smeagende_ gehealde = 46. 24; 4. 15: _tremegende_ = 8. 21;
60. 1: _cweðe_ . . . _sanciende_ = 112. 3.

NPM. (3):—132. 1: _betende_ = 204. 3; 2. 10: _elciende_ = 4. 15; 135. 6: _swindende_ = 231. 20.

II. With an Object (38).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (25):


NSF. (1):—2. 9: _sio_ godcunde stefn myngað and _clypað_, Ḟus _cweðende_ = 4. 14: divina quotidie clamans quid nos admoneat _vox_ _dicens_.

NSN. (3):—25. 12: Be Ḟam halig gewrit _monað_, Ḟus _cweðende_ = 50. 9: _Unde_ _Scriptura_ _praecipit, dicens_.—So _cweðende_ = _dicens_, 27. 19 = 54. 2, 28. 15 = 54. 14.


2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb generally is subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (7):

NSM. (6):—25. 10: clypiende = 50. 3: dicit; owdænde = dicat, 11. 6 = 18. 18, 26. 2 = 50. 20; ib. = ait, 21. 9 = 42. 8; ib. = dicit, 51. 14 = 96. 9; ib. = dicant, 82. 24 (Wells Fragment) = 152. 5.

NSN. (1):—22. 10: clypiende = 44. 12: clamat.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):

NPM. (1):—134. 13*: ðe . . . westestowa and ælætu and anwunung geluﬁæ; geefenlæcende Elian etc. = 231. 6: ad imitationem scilicet Eliae.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin equivalent (5):

NSM. (2):—4. 10: clypiende = 8. 16; 101. 6: faestniende = 166. 16.

NPM. (3):—131. 15: awyrpende (MS. F.: awyrpen) = 204. 1; 6. 1: geefenlæcende = 12. 2; 138. 8: ðieggende = 233. 27.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (9).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (8).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):

NSM. (2):—2. 3: gegremed = 4. 6: irritatus; 28. 2: geondead = angaritia: 7. 54.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerundive (1):

NSM. (1):—34. 2: æfter ðæm fylige capitel of ðæræ apostola lære gemyndelice butan bec gesæd = 64. 7: Lectio sequatur, ex corde recitanda.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):
MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.

NPM. (2):—44. 22\*\*\*\*: eala ßær we asolcene and awacode on anre wucan gelæsten = 82. 26: quod nos tepidi utinam septimana integra persolvamus.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin equivalent (3):

NSM. (1):—28. 6: geneadod = 54. 9 (cf. 28. 2, where geneadod = angariati).

NPM. (2):—11. 16\*\*\*\*: getrymede and anbryrde = 20. 5.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (1).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):

DPM. (1):—25. 16: and nu fram ßam englum us betæhtum ure weorc . . . beoß gebode = 50. 13: et ab Angelis nobis deputatis . . . opera nostra nuntiantur.

THE BLICKLING HOMILIES (52).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (36).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (27).

NSM. (10):—235. 12: Ond ßus cwædende se halga Andreas asette his heafod offer enne his discipula & he onslæp.—Other examples:—133. 17: cumende; 193. 8: dwolgende; 249. 20: efstende (or pred. ?); 113. 29: gnorngende (by Flamme classed as pred. (§ 169), by Morris translated as appos.); 179. 20: leogende; lociende: 229. 28, 245. 8°, 245. 16; 231. 9: ßurhwunigende.

NSF. (5):—5. 8\*\*\*\*: Gehyron we nu to hwylecum gemet seo arwyrdë fæmne & seo halige, on hire cantice gefeonde and blissigende, sang & ßus cwædë.—7. 16: ßæt Maria . . . smeade & swigende ßohte hwæt seo hælettung ware. [Flamme (§ 169. 2) classes swigende as pred.; but Morris correctly translates: “and silently considered.” Swigende may be considered an adverb.] 249. 1\*\*\*\*: hrymende, wepende.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 187

NSN. (1):—199. 17: Æa wæs he mid yrre swislice onstyred, fórðon ðe hit [= hryðær] swa wendende code, & swa ofermodlice ferde. [Flamme (§ 169) classes wendende as pred.; but Morris correctly translates: “because it had gone about so madly and had behaved so arrogantly.” Clearly wendende is coordinate with ofermodlice, and may like it be classed as an adverb.]

NPM. (5):—225. 17: cumað arisende wulfas, todrifasð cêne heorde.—Other examples: —gefeonde: 201. 10, 203. 2 (or pred.?); 207. 8 (or pred.?); 239. 27: ingangende.

NPN. (1):—243. 5: and ingangende on sæt carcern hie [= ða deoflu] gestodon on gesihðe ðaes eadigan Andreas.

DSM. (2):—115. 18*: we him fleondum fylgeða.——245. 3: Ðus gebiddende ðam halgan Andrea Drihtnes stefn wæs worðen on Ebreise, cwæðende.

DPM. (2):—171. 11a–b: swa him Drihten Crist, eallum rihtgelyfdum mannum wunigendum for his noman, & ðurhunu-niggendum in tintregum on sóðre andetnesse ðe ende his lifes untweogendlice, geheht & cwæð.

ASM. (1):—115. 18b: & hine feallendne luðiað.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (9).

NSM. (4):—239. 22: he gesæt be ðam swere anbidende hwæt him gelimpan scolde (or pred.?); 249. 17a–b: he ðær wunode mid him seofon dagas, lærende and strangende hira heortan on geleafan . . . Cristes.—57. 7: spiwende.

NSF. (2):—cwæðende: 229. 27, 245. 4.

NPM. (1):—133. 27: Swylce is gecweden sæt hie ealle on yppan wunedon, ðonen bidende ðæs Halgan Gastes.

NPN. (1):—243. 7: hie [= ða deoflu] gestodon on gesihðe ðæs eadigan Andreas, and hine bismriende mid myclere bismre, and hie cwædôn.

ASM. (1):—215. 21: cwæðende.
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (16).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (15).

NSM. (4):—89. 34b: raðe he lifgende ut eode of his byrgenne mid his agenre mihte æwht.—87. 36: & bejealden to Hælendes cneowum he cwæð.—Other examples:—187. 28: gebeagod; 225. 33: getrymed.

NSF. (1):—197. 20: Æonne is sæo on neaweste sum swiðe mære burh betwih sære se seo is nemned Adriaticus on sæm munte Garganus geseted se is haten Sepontus.

NPM. (5):—85. 9: Hie sæ swiðe forhte & abregde Æus cwædon.—Other examples:—221. 28e: geagyrede; 221. 28a: gesceldode; 221. 28b: gesperode; 171. 28: geweorcde.

NPF. (1):—209. 36: he geseah sæt on sæm clife hangodan on sæm is gean bearwum manige sweorte saula be heora handum gebundne. [Flamme (§ 174. 2) says this wavers between appos. and pred.]

NPN. (1):—127. 33: Swylce eac syndon on sære myclan cirican ehta eagðyrelu swiðe mycele of glæse geworht. [Flamme (§ 173) thinks that geworht is possibly predicative, but Morris translates it as appositive.]

ASM. (2):—11. 7: Arweordian we Crist on binne asetene; 181. 1: beheafdomne.

APF. (1):—31. 20: Æas dæda Æus gedone from Drihtne (but the text is corrupt).

II. WITH AN OBJECT (1).

DSF. (1):—197. 6: se Æe is on ealra ymbhwyrfte to weordienne & to wuldrienne his ciricean, gehweðer ge his agen geweorc ge on his naman gehalgod (but the passage is corrupt).

Note.—The text is too corrupt to construe ahafen in 115. 32.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 189

ÆLFRIC'S HOMILIES,* THORPE (676).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (477).

I. Without an Object (203).

NSM. (90):—II. 78b: se sceadga on hine gelyfende his synna geandette. So: I. 62b1; II. 130a6.—II. 132b1&2: se bispoc, scinende on ... geearnungum and ... geðincðum, on heofenan rice, mid ðam Æelm. Sc. on ecere blisse rixiende wuldrað. So seínende: I. 466a; II. 352a2, 502b1.—Other examples:—I. 386a2: andabidigende; I. 390b3: arisende; I. 226b: astigende; II. 136a1: awegferende; II. 176b1: bifiðigende; blissigende: I. 340a1&2, 580b, 596b4&5, II. 426a; II. 300b1: byrnende; I. 516b: cnúcigende; I. 124b: dædbetende; drothn(i)g ende: I. 398b, II. 546b1; II. 82b: ehtende; faægnigende: I. 596a1, II. 312a3; II. 442b: farende; feallende: I. 380b2, 390b2: forþingenende; II. 40b, 142b2, 176b2: forðsteppende: I. 278a, 500a2, II. 90a1; II. 360a: fundigende; II. 176b4: gesonde; I. 56b1: gewitende; I. 410a: gyddigende; II. 246b1: haftigende; hangi(g)ende: I. 594a1, 596b8, II. 256a, 260b; I. 380b3: hreosende; II. 302a: hrymende (or pred.?); II. 152b1: liegende; II. 474b: lutiendo; lybbende: II. 152b2, 364a1, 500a2, 502b2; I. 54b: mitsigende; II. 182b2: onbesonde; II. 134a: plegende; I. 294b: reordigende; sittende: I. 346a1, 548b, II. 134b2, 382b1; II. 500a1: sméagende; II. 138b2: standende; suwi(g)ende: I. 230a, 350a2; I. 480b: svelledende; I. 338b2: synigigende; I. 596b2: tihþende; trwið(i)g ende: I. 2b, II. 478a1; I. 374a: þeotende; II. 168a3: þruitigende; II. 204b1: ðurhwunigende; II. 130a3: underfonde; II. 140b3: unforhtigende; II. 164b: wedende; I. 52b: welwillende (or advverb?); wepende: II. 134b; wretende: II. 332b1, 348a1; wunigende: I. 134a, 150a2&3, 232a, 326b, 346a2, II. 142b3, 440a, 498b1; I. 432a: yrþigende.

*The superior letters (a and b) refer respectively to the top and the bottom of the page; the superior figures distinguish the several examples.

4
NSF. (11):—I. 438b1 & 2: heo drohtnode gemænelice mid ðam apostolicum werode, infarende and utfarende betwux him.—Other examples:—I. 98a2: donde; I. 146b: lybbende; I. 66b1: rarigende; I. 440a1: sneagende; I. 564a2: utflowende; wepende: I. 566b1, II. 146b; II. 434b: writende; II. 182b4: wunigende.

NSN. (7):—I. 372b2: ðæt folc ða mid anre stemne clypigende cwæð. So: I. 594b2.—Other examples:—I. 566b2: blissigende; II. 140a3: bræstligende; II. 450b: hroesende; II. 142b1: sprecedende; I. 296b: wunigende.

NS. M. or F. (2):—I. 548b1 & 2: fyligde heap...manna...ðurhwunigende, to Criste geægodende.

NS. F. or N. (1):—I. 324b1: gecynd...wunigende.

NPM. (62):—I. 610a2 & 3: Sind eac sume steorran leoh-leafed, færlice arisende and h雷达licc gewitende.—I. 592b1 & 2: ðær ge symle blissiað, blowende and mid Criste rixigende. So rixigende in I. 500a.—Other examples: I. 534b: bid-ende; blissigende: I. 56b4, 564a; II. 258a: bugende; I. 596b4: clypigende; II. 454a1: cumende; I. 68b: dædbetende; drohtni(g)ende: I. 536b, II. 158b2, 296b2, 404a; dfuligende: I. 340b, II. 124b; feallende: I. 38b, 560a2, II. 126b, 214a, 236b, 246b1; II. 34a2: feohtende; II. 334a1: fleogan; I. 352a: forståppende; II. 130b1: gelyfende; I. 46b: hrymende; II. 138a3: liyende; I. 544b2: lutigende; II. 130a4: lybbende; miltsigende: I. 370a, 540b; I. 78b2: niðerfeallende; scinende: II. 136b1, 496a; I. 606b3: singende; sprecedende: II. 248b, 284b2; II. 136b2: stymende; II. 212b: swigende; sweltende: II. 34a3, 554a; I. 496b: synigendinge; II. 606b: eægodende; I. 606b2: tihtende; I. 84a1: upaspringende; I. 334b3: wældigende; wægedende: I. 50b1, 470a, II. 232b; II. 454a2: wepende; wunigende: I. 150a3, 228b2, 238a, 338a (cf. Abs. Pto. in A.-S., p. 11), 406a2, 544b1, 610b, II. 204b2; II. 236a: yrsigende.

NPN. (2):—II. 336a: ða deolu feohtende scuton heora fyrenan flæg an geheal ða sawle;—II. 350b3: hlínhende.

NP. M. or N. (1):—I. 60a1: wesas and wif...fægnigende.
GPM. (2):—I. 38^b_2: wearð gesewen micel menigu heosfonlices werodes God herigendra and singendra (or substantive?). So: I. 38^a^2

DSM. (4):—I. 494^a_: and olypigendum Drihtne to ðam ecan life caflice geandwyrt (or Abs.? Cf. Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 10).—I. 324^b_3: to ðam geleaffullan heape, on ðysre worulde wunigende.—Other examples:—I. 362^a_: cumendum (or Abs.? Cf. Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 10); II. 180^b_1: ridendum.

DPM. (6):—II. 186^b_1^2: cyðde his forðsið on ðer sumum his leornung-enihtum mid him drohtnigendum and sumum ððrum on fyrlenum stowum wunigendum.—Other examples:—gelyfendum: I. 228^b_, II. 284^a_3; I. 440^a_2: onlociendum; II. 284^a_4: sprecendum.

DDM. (1):—II. 172^b_2: ne æteowode ic inc bam slapendum? ASM. (4):—II. 418^a_3, 4, 5: underfoh me nu behreowsiendne, ðone ðe ðu oð ðis andigendne and tælendne forbære; I. 496^b_1: lutigende.

ASF. (2):—I. 376^a_: se dry worhte ða ærene næddran, styrigende swylce heo cucu were; II. 344^a_2: byrnende.

ASN. (2):—II. 508^b_1: cwæð ðæt he hit [= treow] underfenge feallende to foldan.—II. 150^a_: liegande.

APM. (4):—II. 246^b_4: feallende; I. 334^b_1: liegende; II. 154^a_: lybbende; II. 242^b_2: sittende.

APF. (2):—II. 350^b_1^2: ðæ deoflu gelæddon ðif manna sawla, hreowlice gnorniende and grimetende, into ðam fyre.

2. With an Object (274).

NSM. (176):—II. 142^a_: ða began se wer dreorig wepan, andræcigende ðæs ungelimpes.—II. 188^a_: stod sum arwurðe wer mid ... gyrlum, axigende etc.—II. 164^a_2: Benedictus ... tæhte him ðæs ðædbote, bebeodende ðæt etc.—I. 372^b_1: Se apostel genealæhte ðam lice mid aðenedum earmum, ðus biddende. So: I. 126^a_1, 418^b_1, 428^a_1 (w. gen.), 434^b_ (ib.), 452^a_ (ih.), 456^b_, 464^b_1, 598^a_3, II. 26^a_, 110^b_, 134^b_3, 138^b_, 144^b_2, 180^b_2, 304^a_2, 304^b_, 418^a_1, 498^b_2 (w. gen.), 504^b_2. — I.
62a: Johannes besah άus cweðende (cweðende). So: i. 50b2, 66b3, 78b1 & 3, 88b, 98a1, 120a & b, 124b, 126a, 192b, 206a, 208b, 222b, 242a, 264a, 294a, 314b, 324b2, 328a, 350b, 358a1 & 2, 364a, 366b, 370a, 376b, 380a, 380b1, 390a, 390b1, 404b, 406a1, 418b2, 430a, 436b, 442b, 450b, 450a, 480a, 482a, 502a2, 510b2, 520a (= dicens), 522a & b, 530a, 534a, 538b1, 548a, 550a2, 560b3, 568a1 & 2, 568b2, 570b, 572b2, 576a, 596a3, 600b1, 604b, 606a, 610a4; ii. 10b1, 12b, 14b, 16a, 34a4, 52b, 62a2, 72b, 84a1, 112a1 & 2, 182b1, 266b, 288a, 312b1, 328b, 384b, 400a1, 406b, 414b2, 418a2, 428a1, 428b, 432b, 464a, 468a1, 538a, 542b, 562b, 576a.—Other examples: —ii. 540b1: belævende; bigende: i. 298b, 408b; ii. 184b1: blissigende; bodi(g)ende: i. 370b1, 560a1, ii. 130a1, ii. 414b1: bysmirigende (w. dat.); i. 48a: cl ypigende; i. 66a2: ferigende; ii. 446b2: forbugende; ii. 130a2: forhogiende; ii. 168b1: forhigende; ii. 352a3: følgende (w. dat.); ii. 418b1 & 2: geesenværende; i. 78a2: gehyrende; ii. 376b1 & 2: getacningsgende; hæbbende: i. 126a, 130a2; ii. 432b: herigende; lævende: i. 370b2, 596b2; i. 400b1: licetendende; i. 600b2: manigende; ii. 320a: offerseawigende; ii. 446b1: ondrædende; i. 508a: onstandende (should be on standing?); recceende: ii. 350a1, 356b; i. 388a: savende (or pred.?); secawvi(g)ende: ii. 32a, 120a3; secende: i. 338b1 (or pred.?); ii. 358b, 448a; i. 596b3: secgende; i. 388a1: sesende; ii. 138a1: syngende; ii. 334b: smeagende; ii. 182a3: sweringende; swuteligende: ii. 400a2, 466a; ii. 540b2: teonde: tihtende: i. 528a1, ii. 328b; ii. 326b1: toclypigende; todaeæende: i. 322b (w. dat.), ii. 338a, 344a1; i. 106b: towurpende; ii. 128b: səowigende (w. dat.); əreagende: ii. 170b, 256a2; i. 608a1: undergynnende; ii. 346b2: wilmingende (w. gen.): writende: ii. 272a3, 364b2; i. 572b1: yvræende.

NSF. (16):—ii. 76b: Seo endlyfte tid bid sec forwerode ealdnyss, dæm deaðe genealæcende.—Other examples: —arafni(g)ende: i. 30b3, 42b1 & 2; biddende: i. 66b2, 566a2, ii. 184a1; cweðende: i. 104b, 194b, 388a2, 426a3, ii. 42a, 432b2; heorevigende: ii. 438b (w. dat.), 440a2 (ib.).—i. 98a3: ondrædende; ii. 182b3: əeowigende.
THE APPOSITE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 193

NSN. (8)—II. 578b: folc ham gewende, ðancigende ðæm Ælmihhtigan ealra his goda.—Other examples:—biddende: i. 68a3, ii. 140b2; cweðende: i. 200a, 594b3, ii. 110a, 114a; II. 256b: ðæreagende.

NS. M. or N. (1):—II. 342a: sang ... cweðende etc.

NPM. (61):—i. 383: hi ... godum mannum sibbe bodedon, swutellice æteowiendo ðæt etc.—Other examples:—

II. 200b: anbidigende (w. gen.); ii. 548a: andswariende; befrinende: i. 78a, 104a (= dicentes); biddende: i. 74a, 562b, ii. 30b2, 160b2, 176a, 396b, 484a, 486b; ii. 252b1: bigende; bodigende: ii. 492b1; ii. 506a: cltypigende; cweðende: i. 4a, 64a, 68a2, 510b1 (= dicentes), 538b4, 560b3, 596b5, ii. 112b3, 172b1, 252b3, 300a, 484b, 488a1; ii. 168b2: cyðende; ii. 534b2: drincende; ii. 492b3: dweliende (or pred.?) ii. 534b1: etende; i. 588b: ferigende; i. 526b: gadrigende; ii. 226b: geueñæcowe; i. 560a3: gehyrsumigende (w. dat.); i. 90a: heobende; healdende: i. 528b2, 538b3; herigende: i. 32a2, 42b4; ii. 474a: leasetende (or pred.?) maersigende: i. 544a2, ii. 194b; ii. 248b2: meldigende; ii. 34a1: oferswißende; ii. 490b2: onlihtende; ii. 248a: sleande; i. 42b1: swingende; ðancigende (w. dat. and gen.): i. 102a, 606b4, ii. 272b1; ðæowigende (w. dat.): ii. 70b, 310a; ii. 250b1: wregende; wuldirigende: i. 32a, 42b2; ii. 130a5: wundrigende (w. gen.); ii. 490b1: wyrcende.

NPN. (4):—II. 56b: Æt ðæm giftum wearon gesette six stænene wætersfatu, healdende ænlpige twyfealde gemetu orðe ðryfealde.—II. 548b: stodon twa heofonlice werod ætforan ðære cytan dura, singende heofonlicne sang (or pred.?)—
cweðende: ii. 414b3, 416b2.

NP. M. or N. (1):—i. 60a2: weras and wif ... cweðende.

GP. (2):—i. 30b1: weard gesewen micel menigu heofonlices werodes God herigendra. So: i. 38b1.

DPM. (1):—II. 440b1: swa swa he behet eallum him ðeniendum.

APM. (4):—i. 334b2: Manega Lazaras ge habbæð nu liegendæ æt eowrum gatum, biddende eowre oferflowend—
nyssel. So: II. 330a.—Other examples:—I. 28a: bodigende; I. 296a: cweðende.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (199).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (194).

NSM. (94):—II. 182a1: he ða þearle ablicged aweg tengde. —I. 10a: Þæs ðrynnys is an God; Þæt is se Fæder and his wisdom of him sylfum æbre acenned. So: I. 34b, 150a1, 222a, 278b2, 464b2, 500a1, II. 42b3, 204b3, 366a.—Other examples:—II. 352b1: afylled; II. 510b: afyrht (or pred.?) I. 550a1: ahafen; ahangen: II. 598b, 606b; astreht: I. 426b2, II. 186b3; II. 332b3: ægelboren; I. 434b2: awed; II. 254b: awend; I. 598b: aworpen; II. 120a1: befangen; I. 426b2: befrinen; I. 56b2: bewæfet; II. 382b3: fornumen; I. 66a1: forseyldigod; II. 424b: fullfremed; I. 594b1: gewylygd; I. 414b2: geannumod; II. 250a2: gebolgen; gebyld: II. 390b, 412b2; gedrefed: I. 414b1; II. 140a1: geflogen; gefrætevedod: II. 118b; II. 306a1: gefullod; I. 52a2: gefultumod; geglen(c)g(e)d: II. 512b2, 518b2; II. 130b2: gehadod; gehatæn. I. 502a; II. 152a2, 304b1, 308a1, 332b2, 348a2, 412b1, 488b2; gehathyr: II. 374b, 424b; II. 250b2: gelædd; gelædod: I. 128a, II. 54a; II. 270b: gelifæst; II. 250b1: gelogod; gelysfed: I. 152a1, 332b4; I. 468b2: gemartyrod; II. 158b1: gemenged; II. 348a3: gemetegod; I. 588b: geneadod; II. 24a: geripod; II. 42b2: gesceapen; gescryd(d): I. 528b, 578b (or pred.?), II. 312b3, 382b2, 512b1; geset(t): I. 126a3, 130a1, 218a1; II. 234b: gesworen; I. 428b: getogen; I. 614b: gedread; II. 36b: geðungen; II. 516b2: gewaht; geweypnod: I. 450b2, II. 334b2, 502b; geworth: I. 278b1, II. 42b1; I. 426b1: geweregæd; II. 518a: gewuldrod; I. 52a1: oftorfod; II. 150b: onbrÝyd; I. 290b: rihtgelysfed; II. 514a: toswollen; II. 372a: unabeden; II. 204a1: unbegunnen; I. 428a2: ungeaxod; II. 336b: ungeðerod; II. 204a2: ungeendod.

NSF. (14):—II. 546b3, 548a1: Hire modor, Redempta gehaten, stod hire ofer, micclum afyrht for ðam heofonlican
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 195

leohte. So gehaten: II. 284a1, 306a2, 584a.—Other examples:
—I. 446a: ahafen; II. 58a: astreht; I. 502b: aðrawn; I. 60b: awreht; II. 90a2: fortreden; II. 138b2: gelaðod; II. 308b: getintregod; II. 498a: geworht; II. 586b: ymbscryd (or pred.?).

NSN. (16):—I. 184b1 & 2: ða fift hlafas wæron swylice hit säd ware, na on eordan besawan, ac gemeningyld fram þam þe eordan geworhte. Other examples:—II. 572a: afyrht; II. 494b1 & 2: agoten; I. 352b: beclysed; II. 140a2: bepæhte; II. 326b2: forscylgdod; II. 272b2: geblodgod; gehaten: II. 312b2, 438a; I. 508b2: gescrydd; I. 508b1: gesett; II. 510b3: geðwüht; II. 140b1: ofscamod; II. 510b2: loslopen.

NS. F. or N. (1);—I. 42b4: gemynd ... geswutelod.

NPM. (20):—I. 608a2: ðæt we huru his genealescædan dom, mid mislicum swinglum æfærede, oudrædon.—Other examples:—II. 326b2: acennede; I. 98a4: asycyred; asende: I. 348a1 & 2, 540a; I. 560b1: fordemde; fornumene: II. 246b2, 348b; I. 84a2: forscodelæ; II. 272a2: gesægægan; gehaten: I. 508b1: gesett; II. 510b3: gescrydde; II. 140b1: ofscamod; II. 510b2: loslopen.

NPF. (3):—II. 174a: Twa myneccena wæron drohtingende on gehendysses his mynstres of ægelborenre mægðe asprungaene.—Other examples:—I. 366b: bepæhte; II. 298a: geendode.

NPN. (3):—II. 380a: deoflu, þe feollon to his fotum, mid fyrhte fornumene (or pred.?).—II. 326a1: comon cwelmæere deoflu swutellice gesewene, on sweartum hiwe, in to þam cilde.—II. 354b: He befran þa hwam þa gebyltlu gemynte wæron, swa mærllice getimbrode.

GPM. (1):—II. 290a: gelaðunge gecorenra manna to þam ecan life.

DSM. (2):—II. 546a: G. awrat be sumum geðylwidgan were, Stephanus gehaten.—II. 308a2: at foran þam casere, Aurelianus genamod.
DSF. (2):—π. 494*: becomon to anre heafodbyrig, Suanir gehaten;—π. 546b²: be sumere mynceyn, Romula gehaten.  
DPM. (1):—π. 286*: Sume geewemdon englum on heora gesthusum underfangenum ðurh cumliðynsse.  
ASM. (21):—π. 596¹, ², ³: Ic gelyfe on ænne Crist, Hælend Drihten, ðone ancennedan Godes Sunu, of ðam Fæder acenned ær ealle worulda, God of Gode, Leoth of Leohite, Soðne God of Soðum Gode, acennedne na geworhtne. So acennedne: I. 198*.—π. 168¹: asende his swurdboran, Riggo gehaten (sic!). So gehaten = an accusative: π. 358¹, 468² (= eo nomine), 480b, 492b².—π. 162¹: asende him ænne focan to lace mid attre gemenoged.—Other examples:—π. 112b: befangenne; π. 598b²: forlorenne; π. 92a²: forðrostan; π. 280a: gebrædne; π. 252a: gccigedne; π. 120a²: geendebyrdne; i. 210a: gefreatevodne; i. 330b: geglencgodnedne; π. 416b²: gehafstne; gesorydne: π. 168², 500b.  
ASF. (2):—π. 182²: se halga wer hæfde ane swustor, Scolastica gehaten; π. 124*: afandode.  
ASN. (7):—π. 264a²: Ne ete ge of ðam lambe nan ðing hraw, ne on wætere gesoden, ac gebræd to fyre. So gesoden: π. 278b¹.—Other examples:—π. 260b²: gedeced; π. 198b: gefadod; i. 42a²: gehalgod; i. 134b: gelacod; i. 42a¹: gewemmed.  
APM. (3):—π. 516b¹: oððe hwam betæhest ðu us nu forlætene?—Other examples:—π. 486b¹: gedrehte; i. 568b¹: gescrydde.  
APF. (3):—i. 68a¹ & ²: ge begeaton eow ðeosterfullle wunu nga mid dracum afylde, and . . . mid . . . witum afylde.—i. 506*: ða gesawon hi æftoran ðære eyrcan nördura, on ðam marmanstane, swilce mannæ fotlæsta fæstlice on ðam stane geðyde. [Though Sweet and others give fotlæst as masculine only, it seems to be feminine here. See, too, i. 508*]  
APN. (1):—i. 218a²: se sacerd bletsian secela palmtwigu and hi swa gebletynode ðam folce ðælan.
II. With an Object (5).

NSN. (1):—ii. 594\textsuperscript{a2}: ðu ceaf, ecum ontendnyssum ge-gearcod, gehyr me.

NPM. (1):—i. 544\textsuperscript{b3}: deorum geferlæhte, to engelicum sprecum gewunode, on micclum wundrum scinende wæron.

NPN. (1):—ii. 314\textsuperscript{b}: manega sind beboda mannum gesetle (or pred.?).

GSF. (1):—ii. 292\textsuperscript{a}: tihð ðurh miltsunge him forgufenre mihte (or Abs. Dat.? See Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 11).

APM. (1):—ii. 598\textsuperscript{b1}: gescyld ðine ðeowan ðinum mæ-genðrymme underðeodde.

Note: Latin Participles occur as follows:—(1) untranslated: credentes, persuadentes, securi, in Pref. to i.; (2) translated: dicens (dicentes) = cueðende, i. 510\textsuperscript{b1}, 520\textsuperscript{a} = befrinende in i. 104\textsuperscript{a};—raptum = ðe wæs gegripen, ii. 332\textsuperscript{b};—circumdata = ymscryd, ii. 586\textsuperscript{b}.

ÆLFRIC'S LIVES OF SAINTS (543).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (335).

I. Without an Object (129).

NSM. (54):—442. 24: com se arwurða swyðun to sumum...

NSF. (37):—xxIII. B. 431: ic cweæ e to hire geornlice and unforbugendlice heaaldende and cweæende.—xxIII. B. 472: mine cneowa gebigde beforan ðam halgan andwitan ðysum wordum biddende.—212. 34: Heo aras ða bílgende for ðære beorhtan gesiððe (or pred.?). So: xxIII. B. 461.—


NSN. (5):—78. 468: wunode an ðæden mærlice droht-nigende geond feowertig geare fec ðære gehealden.—Other examples:—xxVI. 159: feallende; 88. 652: flitende; 184. 242: grymetende; 44. 327: wunigende.

NPM. (17):—98. 154: ða eoden ða hæðengyldan into heora temple clypigende hlude to ðam leasan gode.—226. 110: ða clypodon ðær ðry weras onwigende æt ðæm geate.—

Other examples:—438. 99: blyssigende; 514. 445: dreori-
THE APPOITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 199


NPN. (4):—224. 861 & 2: binnan ðam wæron ealle cuce nytenu creopende and ganginge (or pred.?).—Other examples:—xxvii. 39: dynigende; xxiv. 53: grymetende.

DSM. (2):—14. 79: Nis nanum menn on . . . life libbendum nanes ðinges swa mycel neod.—xxiii. B. 673: Þus mid tearum biddende, him eft ðæðæc on befeoll ðus ewe-ðende. [I omit he after Þus, as does Skeat's "B."]

DSF. (3):—212. 40: forgif me ða to clænnyste to criste fairendre.—xxiii. B. 752: geic eac gebiddan ðeahhwæðere for me of ðyssere worulde hloorende on ðam monðe etc.;—36. 185: liegendre.

ASM. (2):—78. 489: gelædde hine on mergen forð swiðe sægres hiwes buton ælcum womme and wel sprecande;—78. 4812: unspreecende.

ASF. (2):—334. 216: Se sang geswutelað ða halgan ðrynnysse on anre godcundnyssse æfre wunigende; ib. xxix. 5 (?).

APM. (3):—388. 80: se cyning sende swyðe fela æren-deracio to . . . eardum embe ðe axiende.—Other examples:—xxx. 429: gebiddende (or pred.?); 32. 130: liegende.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (206).

NSM. (114):—xxvi. 1371 & 2: he ðærbinnan wunode godes lof urereande and gerihtlecende sæt folc.—xxiii. B. 96: ðas weorc Zosimus behealdende hine sylfie geornlice to fullfremednyssse adened[e] gemang ðam emnwyrtuum. So: xxx. 233.—60. 166: [he] com to basilie biddende fulluhtes. —62. 193: Ða asende se ealdorman sona to basilie, biddende earmlice sæt etc.—78. 487: ac se bisceop . . . wacode ealle ða niht mid ðam wædlian hreoflian, biddende ðone hælend
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 201


NSN. (5):—xxiii. B. 595: ac godes word is eucu and scearp, innan levende ðis mennise andgyt.—Other examples:—biddende: 60. 171, xxv. 716; xxiii. B. 324: cweðende; xxiii. B. 287: hæbbende (= reducens).

NPM. (44):—472. 9: gebugon to fulluhte behreowsigende heora synna.—Other examples:—biddende (w. g. or ac.): 46. 357(?), 70. 334, 138. 352, 240. 40, 242. 75, 400. 258, 448. 121, 452. 188; xxv. 336, 768; xxix. 172; xxvi. 79: bodigende; 136. 305: clypigenede; cweðende: xxx. 140, 281, 425; xxix. 192: cyðende; xxvi. 238: feccende; xxviii. 10: folgiende (w. dat.); xxiii. B. 139: gefyllende; geweende: xxiii. B. 377, xxx. 184; 148. 24: halsigende; heri[g]ende: 70. 349 (or pred.?), 102. 222, 110. 338, 351, 142. 403; mærsigende: 26. 37, 230. 162, 242. 51 (or pred. ?); xxv. 495: sceotiende; 54. 56: secende (or pred. ?); segende: 146. 458, xxv. 121; ðanci(g)ende (w. dat. & gen.): 114. 410, 132. 249, 438. 85, 460. 322, 478. 96, xxv. 453; 80. 526: wuldrigende; 184. 249: wurðigende.

NP. F. or M. (1):—224. 66: wydewan and ðearfan ... æteowigende.

GSF. (1):—xxiii. B. 426: ða onhran soðlice min mod and ða eagan minre heortan hælo andgit mid me sylfre
Sencende sæt me ðone ingang belucen ða onseormeganda (sic) minra misdæda (but, as is evident, the text is very corrupt).


ASM. (2):—480. 143: het se foresæda dema gelædan ðone halgan on heardre recentage seorr on wræcsið ferigende on scipe.—xxx. 411: se casere . . . het hine ungyrdan and bewæpnian and beforan his ansyne ætstandan mid his wife and his cildum swilce ofergægendne his hlafordes bebod.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE’ (208).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (205).


Other examples:


NPM. (37):—180. 167: ac hi... ablyeged cyrdon to heora... hlaforde.—468. 437: ðæah æ þa Iudeiscan ðurh deofol beswícene nellon gelyfan.—Other examples:—afyllede: 126. 168, xxviii. 60; afyrhte: 166. 317, xxv. 611, xxvi. 231, xxix. 305; 54. 53: alysde; 116. 25: æelborne; xxvi. 93: cumene; fornumene: 58. 138 (or pred.), 204. 148, 326. 96; 126. 167: geborene; 342. 73: gebundene; gebylde: xxv. 488, xxvii. 149; 208. 216: geegsode; xxv. 389: gehyrte; 318. 172: geleofede; gelyf(e)de: xxiv. 2, xxv. 109, xxviii. 15; 184. 245: gemartyrode; xxv. 558:
getemode; 460. 319: geuntrumode; gewærnode: 190. 359, xxv. 333; xxv. 559: gewenode; geworhte: 386. 38, 408. 386; 506. 300: ofdræde; 298. 228: ofhrorene; xxv. 497: ofslagene; 54. 58: onbryrde; xxiii. B. 571: toturene (but the passage is corrupt).

NPF. (1):—xxv. 813: on ðysre worulde synd ðreo ende-byrdynesse on annysse gesette; ðæt synd etc.


DSF. (11):—xxiii. B. 438: forðon witodlice genoh rihtlic is me swa besmitenre fram ðiure clænan ungewemmedynysse beon ascirod.—xxiii. B. 598: Nu ic ðæ . . . andbidde . . . ðæt ðu for me earmlicre forlegenre gebidde.—54. 83: gewendon to æure widgyllan byrig, Antiochia geeiged. So geeiged: 146. 462.—54. 66: ferde to ðære [flowendan] ea iordanis gehaten. So gehaten: 68. 325, 184. 264, 238. 11, xxv. 413, xxix. 4, 146.

DSN. (2):—196. 10: betæhte hi anum fulum wife Afrodosia geeiged.—xxxi. 11: Martinus . . . ðæs geboren on ðam fastene Sabaria gehaten.

DS. M. or N. (1):—172. 36: He geglaundge me mid orle of golde awefen.

ASM. (20):—44. 3501 & 2: Basilla hæfde enne hæðene wogere, pompeius geeiged, swiðe ægelboren. So geeiged: xxix. 213.—312. 68: A . . . genam ænne mycelne bollan mid bealuwe afylled.—xxvii. 11: forlet ða ænne del on ðære ylcan byrig ðæ Crist on ðrowode, swa swa us cyðað gewritu, mid seolfre bewunden.—Other examples:—200. 75: gebigedne (or pred.?) ; xxiii. B. 661: gefylledne; gehaten: 28. 67, 104. 230, 124. 125, 194. 409, 222, 42, 302. 277, 408. 396, xxv. 761, xxvi. 53, xxix. 204, 214; 78. 481; toswollen; 78. 482: unafunden.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 205


ASN. (2):—92. 26: ða fundon his magas sum ædelboren mæden basilissa gehaten; 132. 258: untobrocen.

APM. (1):—246. 146: unscrydde.


APN. (1):—24. 225: ealle lichamlicera ðinga hiw heo mæg on hyre sylfre gehiwan, and swa gehiwode on hyre mode gehealden.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (3).

NSN. (1):—288. 71: forðan ðe heo gebedhus is, gode gehalgod.

ASM. (1):—xxiii. B. 676: Eala me ungesæligan swa rihtwislicere gesihðe afremdad me.

ASF. (1):—xxiii. B. 442: gefultuma me nu anegre ælces fylstes bedæled (MS. G: bedæled).

Note: Latin Participles occur in 332. 191 (vox clamantis = clypiende stemri), 338. 33 (vir videns deum = ðæt is on Engliscre spræçe: se ver ðe god gesihð), xxiii. B. 280 (pulans = smeagende), xxiii. B. 287 (reducens = hæbbende).

ÆLFRIC'S DE VETERI ET DE NOVO TESTAMENTO (41).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (15).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (5).

NSM. (4):—18. 32: he bijende feoll to i. fotum (or pred.?).—20. 24: Bellatores ... ure burga healdas ... feohrende mid wænmum; lëbbende (lybbende): 2. 26, 12. 40.

DPM. (1):—5. 34: [mête] him ælce dæg com edniwe of heofenum feowertig wintra fyrst on ðam westene farenende.
II. With an Object (10).

NSM. (7):—18. 33²: he... feoll to l. fotum... biddende miltsunge.—Other examples:—16. 32: bodigende (or pred.?); 16. 10: cweðende; 16. 30²: lærende; 20. 10: seegende; wyr-cende (wircende): 15. 23, 16. 30¹.

NPM. (3):—19. 45: ðær ðær hig blissiað andbidiende git ðæs ecan lifes; heriende: 5. 28, 8. 27.

B.—The Preterite Participle (26).

I. Without an Object (26).

NSM. (13):—2. 9, 10: Her is seó halige ðrinnis on ðisum ðrinn mannum... se... fæder of nanum ðrinnum gecumen, and se mielca wisdom of ðam wisan fæder æfre... acenned.—Other examples:—3. 25: adrenceæd; 13. 40: ahangen; 3. 2: awend; 2. 44: gefæstnod; gehaten: 9. 20, 11. 4; 11. 5: gelyfed; 17. 24: gestrangod; 12. 34: gesōgen; 18. 33¹: ofergoten; 18. 34: ofseamod.

NPM. (3):—20. 20: Laboratores sind yrðlingas and æhte men to ðam anum betæhte etc. So: 20. 22.

NPF. (2):—14. 12: ðæt syndon ðreo bec mid lufe afylledæ folce to lare; 11. 21: gehatene.

DSM. (1):—16. 24: binnan anum igoðe beor on wræcsidæ, Pathmos gehaten.

ASM. (4):—3. 23: se aewéalde his broðor Abel gehaten unscildigne mannan. So gehaten = acc. sing. masc.: 7. 18, 8. 20, 11. 9.

ASF. (1):—15. 44: he awrat ða boc on his wræcsidæ Apocalipsis gehaten.

ASN. (2):—7. 34¹ &²: He æræðe... ðæt... tempel... swa fægere getimbrod and swa fæste getrymmed; 7. 35: oferworht.

II. With an Object (0).

No example.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 207

ÆLFRIC'S HEPTATEUCH (99).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (61).

I. Without an Object (25).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (15):—

NSM. (9):—Judges 4. 20: gif her ænig man cume acsi-
gende embe me = cum venerit alquis interrogans te (or pred.?).—Gen. 19. 14: Da wæs him geðuht, swilce he:
gamnigende spræce = Et visus est eis quasi ludens loqui.—
Other examples:—ingangende = ingrediens: Deut. 28. 6¹,
19¹; Num. 22. 34: nitende = nesciens; Gen. 15. 17: smoci-
ende = fumans (or attrib.?).—Num. 16. 48: standende =
stans; utgangende = egrediens: Deut. 28. 6², 19².

NSN. (2):—Ex. 2. 23: Israela bearn clypode geomriende
for ðam weorcum = ingemiscentes filii Israel propter opera
vociferati sunt; Job. 1. 19: hroesende = corruens.

NPM. (3):—Judges 15. 14: urnon him togeanes ealle
.hyldende = Et cum Philisthiim vociferantes occurrissent ei (or
pred.?).—Other examples:—Ex. 1. 7¹: spryttende = germi-
nantes; Num. 16. 18: standende = stantes.

NPN. (1):—Gen. 8. 3: ða wæteru ða gecirdon of ðære
eordan ongean farende = Reversæque sunt aquæ de terra
evuntes et redeuntes.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or is in
immediate connection with an appositive participle (5):—

NSM. (1):—Gen. 22. 3: Abraham ða aras on ðære ylcan
nihte and ferde mid twam cnapum to ðam fyrlenum lande
and Isaac samod on assum ridende = Igitur Abraham de
nocte consurgens stravit asinum suum, ducens secum duos
juvenes et Isaac filium suum abiit in locum.

NPM. (4):—Num. 14. 45: and big micclum slogon and
ehtende adrifon = et percutiens eos atque occidens persecutus
est eos.—Other examples:—Num. 20. 30: beweopon geomeri-
ende = flevit (there is an ap. ptc. in the sentence); Josh. 8. 16: hrymdon ridende = vociferantes persecuti sunt eos; Job 2. 12: hrymdon wepende = exclamantes ploraverunt.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):

NSM. (1):—Gen. 24. 63: He eode ut on sæt land sæncende = Et egressus fuerat ad meditandum in agro.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no exact Latin correspondence (4):


NPM. (2):—Job 2. 12: cumende; Josh. 7. 6: liegende.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (36).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (25):

NSM. (12):—Gen. 1. 22: And bletsode hig, ðus cweðende = Benedixitque eis dicens. So cweðende = dicens: Gen. 2. 16, 8. 15, 17. 17; Ex. 3. 16, 5. 6; Deut. 32. 48, 34. 4. — Other examples:—Job 1. 8: yfel forbugende = recedens a malo; Job 1. 8: ondrcedende = timens; Job (Exposition), p. 266, l. 20: secende = quaerens (for Latin cf. I. Peter 5. 8); Gen. 2. 6: wætriende = irrigans.

NSF. (5):—Gen. 18. 12: (Sarra) hlohi digellice, ðus cweðende = Quæ risit occulte, dicens. So cweðende = dicens: Gen. 15. 4; Num. 16. 41.—Other examples:—Num. 10. 33: sceawiende = providens; scegende = dicens: Gen. 15. 1.

NSN. (1):—Judges 6. 7: Swa Israele folc ða earmlice clipode to ðam . . . gode, his helps biddende = Et clamavit Israel ad dominum, postulans auxilium.

NPM. (1):—Gen. 3. 5: ge beoð ðonne englum gelice witende ægðer ge god ge yfel = et eritis sicut dii, scientes bonum et malum.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 209

ASF. (1):—Gen. 1. 121: seo eorðe forð ateah growende wirte and sæd berende be hire cinne = protulit terra herbam virentem et facientem semen juxta genus suum.

ASN. (4):—Gen. 1. 111Æ: Sprité seo eorðe growende gærs and sæd wircende and æppebære treow wæstm wircende æfter his cinne = Germinet terra herbam virentem et facientem semen et lignum pomiferum faciens fructum juxta genus suum; ib. Gen. 1. 122; Gen. 1. 123: hæbbende = habens.

APF. (1):—Gen. 1. 29: ic forgeaf eow eall gærs and wyrta sæd berende ofer eorðan = dedi vobis omnem herbam afferentem semen super terram.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually either subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (3):

NSM. (1):—Deut. 4. 45: ... æ, Æ Moises foresette and laga and domas, Æus ewediende = ... lex, quam proposuit M., et ... judicia quae locutus est.

NSF. (1):—Josh. 10. 6: Da sende seo burhwaru ... to Æosue biddende sæt etc. = miserunt ad Æosue et dixerunt ei.

ASN. (1):—Deut. 11. 25: Ge ... gehirdon his word, Æus ewediende ... et locutus est vobis.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no exact Latin correspondence (8):


B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (38).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (38).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (11):—
NPM. (3):—Num. 15. 44: Hig swa ṣeah ablende beotlice astigon = At illi contenebrati ascenderunt.—Other examples:
—Ex. 1. 7²: gestrangode = roborati; Num. 16. 33: ofhorene = operti.
ASM. (3):—Gen. 22. 13: geseah ṣær anne ramm betwux ṣam bremelum be ṣam hornum gehaft = viditque . . .
arietem inter veprès harentem cornibus (or pred.?).—Other examples:
—Ex. 9. 24: hagol wið fyr gemenged = mista;
Ex. 29. 23: gesprengedne = conspersæ.
ASN. (2):—Ex. 12. 8: And eton ealle ṣæt flæsc on fyre gebroedd = Et edent carnes nocte illa assas igni:
—Ex. 12. 9: gesoden = coctum aqua.
APM. (1):—Levit. 2. 4: Bring elene ofenbacene hlafas mid ele geasmirede = panes conspersos oleo.
APN. (2):—Ex. 31. 18: He sealde Moise twa stænene wexbreda mid godes handa agrafene = duas tabulas lapideas scriptas digito dei; Gen. 41. 6: forscruncene = percussae.
2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or
is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (1):—
NSN. (1):—Judges 16. 4: Hine beswac swa ṣeah siððan an wif, Dalila gehaten = Post hæc amavit mulierem, quæ vocabatur Dalila.
3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (2):—
NPM. (2):—Ex. 12. 19¹⁰²: ne ete ge nan ɕing onhafenes, ne utan cymene ne innan lande geborene = tam de adventis quam de indigenis terrae.
4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the ablative (1):—
NSM. (1):—Judges 13. 2: An man wæs eardigende on Israhela Ȣeode, Manue gehaten = Erat autem quidam vir nomine Manue.
5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (1):—
NPM. (1):—Ex. 4. 31: and hig gebædon hig to gode nywel *astrêhte* on corðan = et proni adoraverunt.

6. An A.-S. appositive participle has no exact Latin correspondence (22):—


NSF. (1):—Gen. 21. 6: *ofwundrod*.

NSN. (1):—Num. 16. 34: *afirht*.


DSF. (1):—Judges 16. 1: to anre birig, Gaza *gehaten*.

DPM. (1):—Judges 16. 7: *mid seofon rapum of sinum geworht*.


II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

ANGLO-SAXON HOMILIES AND LIVES OF SAINTS, I. (89).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (49).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (25).

NSM. (5):—3. 105: Be *çam* sang se witega *çisum wordum cwefende*. So: 4. 41.—Other examples:—*lybbende*: 1. 87, 9. 195; 3. 78: *seegende* *çisum wordum*. 
NSF. (2):—1. 24: Æos is seo halige ðrynnys, þe ealle ðing gesceop, on anre godecundnysse æfre wunigende.—So: 3. 130.

NSN. (2):—3. 437: Sum ... wif ... his fyt æðwone and gelome hi cyste, licgende æt his fotum; 9. 80: wunigende.


NPM. (1):—3. 324: Þeah Þe hi [= mædenu] clæne beon on lægðade lybbende.

NP. M. or F. (1):—3. 12: lybbende.

DPM. (1):—7. 151: [mete] heoþ ælce dæge com edniwe of heofenum xl wintra fyrst on ðam wæstene farende.

ASM. (1):—9. 330: ac ... he æsende me ongean on his sige blissigende and on eowre alysednysse.

APM. (1):—9. 103: god hi ða gelædde ... ealle ofer ða ... sæ, siðigende be ðam grunde.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (24).

NSM. (4):—1. 304: se ... lareow lærde us ðus cweðende.—Other examples:—4. 55: secende; seegende: 3. 181, 3. 531.

NSN. (2):—8. 176: heo ... fiste, biddende æt gode, Þæt etc.—Other examples:—9. 318: cweðende; 9. 417: ðeo-wigende (w. dat.).

NSN. (2):—9. 111: Þæt godes folc ða eode upp be ðam grunde, herigende heora drihten; 3. 479: singende.


APM. (1):—2. 117: Iohannes ... geseah Crist standan and ðone clænan floce mid him, hundteontig ðsusenda and
feower and feowertig ðusenda, swiðe hlude singende ðone heofonlican sang.

B. THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (40).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (40).


NSF. (3):—9. 207: heo fæste symle buton on freolsdagum, mid heran gesoryd to hire lice æfre.—Other examples:—7. 61: æwogen; 3. 27: gesceapen.

NSN. (4):—3. 349: Iacobes wif, Rachel geçiged, twentig wintra wunode etc.—Other examples:—3. 334: gehaten; 8. 149: tostenced; 3. 95: ungewemmed.


NPF. (1):—7. 302: Twa bee beoð isette . . . machabœorum ihatene.

DSM. (1):—3. 25: And eac his godecundnys wæs on ðære menniscynsse to anum soðan Criste of hyre acenned, æfre unbegunnen on ðære godecundnysse.

DSF. (1):—2. 114: on his gastlican gesihðe, Apocalipsis gehaten.

DSN. (1):—3. 362: mid his wife, Elisabeth genamod.


ASF. (1):—9. 9: towænde se cyning heora . . . burh, Hierusalem gehaten.
II. With an Object (0).

No example.

ANGLO-SAXON HOMILIES AND LIVES OF SAINTS, II. (22).

A.—The Present Participle (16).

I. Without an Object (11).

NSM. (2):—15. 353: ic hit unwillende do; 10. 90: scamieende.

NSF. (6):—18. 25: swilce heo dweliende syder come.
So: 18. 29.—Other examples:—10. 181: geomrierende; wepeende: 10. 100, 10. 180; 18. 32: woperiende.

NPF. (1):—15. 51: hire fostermoder hi het gan mid odrum fæmnum on feld, seap to hawienne, and hi swa dydo[n] spinnende.

APM. (2):—15. 2421iske: Sume ic slaepende beswac and sume eac wacigende = 19. 265: Et cum dormiunt, venio super eos et excito illos a somno.

II. With an Object (5).

NSM. (4):—15. 52: Da ferde Olibrius to Anthiochiam, axiende etc.; cweende: 18. 57, 80, 109.

DSM. (1):—11. 16: Audiens ex ore meo sermonem meum, adnuntiabis eis ex me, non ex te. Daet is on urum geðeode: Of minum muðe gehystendum [for gehystende by attraction to muðe?] Þu bodast hym mine spræce of me, næs of Þe.

B.—The Preterite Participle (6).

I. Without an Object (5).

NSM. (1):—15. 12: væs sum hæðen cyninge, Theodosius gehaten.
NSF. (1):—15. 44: heo cwæð: ic eom ſin ſeowa [sic!] clea and ungwæmmed.

NSN. (1):—16. 55: hig hym dryncan sealdon, ſæt wæs wyn and eed gemended togedere.

NPM. (1):—12. 45: hwilum Willes, hwilum geneadode gewuniað of to drincanne.

ASF. (1):—15. 45: De ic me between ungwæmmode.

II. With an Object (1).

NSM. (1):—17. 23: ic eam of Grecane rice and ic of Judean wæs, ſan Pontisscen Pilate underſeodd.

Note: Latin Participles.—Latin participles occur in 11. 16 (quoted under dative above), in 13. 13 (sciens = ſa wiste se hælend), in 13. 59 (sciens = He wiste), and in 18. 68 (et videns ſilium etc. = no A.-S. equivalent). Again in no. 19, which is entirely in Latin and which is the basis, though not the literal equivalent, of no. 15 (Anglo-Saxon), about 55 appositive participles occur; but, as no one of these is translated by an appositive participle in Old English, it seems unnecessary to cite them.

GOSPELS1 (280).

A.—The Present Participle (237).

I. Without an Object (115).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (107):—

5, 15. 29, 17. 17; Mk. 1. 35: arisende = surgens; L. 5. 3ª: astigende = ascendentis; Mk. 7. 34: behealdende = suspiciens; L. 3. 18: bodigende = exhortans; Mk. 1. 7: bugende = pro-cumbens; clypiende = clamans: Mk. 15. 39, L. 23. 46ª; ib. = exclamans: Mk. 1. 26ª; Mat. 12. 44: cumende = veniens; Mk. 9. 20: fæmende = spumans; Mat. 4. 9: feallende = cadens; gangende = ambulans: Mat. 14. 25 (or pred.?); Mk. 6. 48 (or pred.?); ib. = transiens, L. 12. 37; L. 15. 5: geblissiende = gaudens; Mk. 1. 31: genealwendo = accedens; hrymende = clamans: Mk. 5. 5 (or pred.?); 5. 7; ib. = exclamans: Mk. 9. 26ª, L. 8. 28; ingan(o)gende = ingressus: Mk. 1. 21, L. 1. 28; lærende = docens: Mat. 4. 23, 9. 35ª, Mk. 12. 35; L. 17. 24: lyhtende = coruscans; L. 5. 3ª: sittende = sedens; Mk. 7. 33: spectende = exspuens; L. 4. 39: standende = stans; Mk. 15. 30: stigende = descendens; L. 1. 78: upspringende = oriens; utgangende = egressus: Mk. 1. 45, L. 4. 42.

NSF. (3):—L. 2. 38: And ßeos ßære tide becumende drihtne andette = Et hæc, ipsa hora superveniens, confite-batur Domino.—Other examples:—L. 2. 19: smeagende = conferens; L. 2. 37: ßeowigende = serviens.

NSN. (4):—Mk. 5. 33ª & b. Æt wif ßa ondrcedende & forhtigende com & astrehte hi = Mulier vero timens et tremens . . . venit et procidit; gangende = introiens: Mk. 7. 15, 7. 18.

NPM. (30):—Mk. 15. 31: heahsacerdas bysmriende be-twux ßam bocerum cwædon = sacerdotes illudentes . . . dicebant.—Other examples:—Mk. 7. 1: cumende = venientes; L. 22. 65: dysigende = blasphemantes; L. 2. 16: efstende = festinantes; Mk. 16. 20: farende = profecti; gangende = intrantes, Mat. 2. 11; ib. = incedentes, L. 1. 6; gehyrende = audientes: Mat. 13. 13ª, Mk. 4. 12ª, L. 8. 10ª; geseonde = videntes: Mk. 4. 12ª, L. 8. 10ª; Mk. 11. 24: gyrmende = orantes; Mat. 9. 27: hrymynde = clamantes; Mat. 12. 45: ingangende = intrantes; Mat. 5. 11: leogende = mentientes; lociende = videntes: Mat. 13. 13ª, 13. 14; L. 2. 48: sari-gende = dolentes; Mat. 27. 36: sittende = sedentes; Mat. 17.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 217

3: sprecede = logentes; Mat. 6. 5: standende = stantes; Mk. 6. 32: stigende = adscendentes; L. 5. 5: swincende = laborantes; utgangende (utgangynde) = exeuntes: Mat. 8. 28, 9. 31, Mk. 3. 6, 6. 12; L. 20. 26: wundrigende = mirati; L. 22. 44: yrnende = decurrentis.

NPN. (1):—Mat. 8. 32: hig [= ða deofla] ða utgangende ferdoii on ða swin = At illi exeuntes abierunt in porcos.

NDM. (1):—L. 24. 17: hwæt synt ða spæca ðe gyt recceað inc betwynan gangende? = Qui sunt hi sermones quos confertis ad invicem ambulantes?

GPM. (1):—L. 18. 7: Soðlice ne deð God his gecorenra wrace clypiendra to him dæges & nihtes = Deus autem non faciet vindictam electorum suorum clamantium ad se die ac nocte.

GPN. (1):—L. 8. 32: And ðar wæs micel heord swyna on ðam munte læsiendra = Erat . . . grex porcorum . . . pascentium in monte.

DSN. (1):—Mat. 13. 47b: Eft is heofena rice gelic asendum nette on ða sæ & of sæcum fisc-cynne gadrigendum = Iterum simile est regnum cælorum sagement missæ in mare, et ex omni genere piscium congreganti.

DPM. (5):—L. 6. 17: And mid him farendum he stod on feldlice stowe = Et descendens cum illis stetit in loco campestri. [Or shall we emend farendum to farende in accordance with the Latin?]—Other examples:—Mk. 9. 42: gelyfendum = credentibus; Mk. 16. 10a: heofendum = lugentibus; Mat. 11. 16: sittendum = sedentibus; Mk. 16. 10b: wependum = flentibus.

DPM. (2):—L. 7. 32a & b: Hi sint gelice cildum on stræte sittendum & specendum betwux him = Similes sunt pueris sendentibus in foro, et loquentibus ad invicem.

ASM. (4):—Mk. 15. 21: & genyddon sumne wegerendne simonem cireneum cumende of ðam tune . . . ðæt he etc. = Et angariaverunt prætereuntem quempiam, Simonem Cyreneum venientem de villa etc.—Other examples:—J. 1. 9:
cumendne = venientem; L. 17. 7a: eregendne = arantem; Mat. 9. 2: lioendne = jacentem.

ASN. (1):—L. 6. 38b: god gemet & full gebeapod and oferflowende hig syllæs = mensuram, bonam . . . et superefluentem dabunt.

APM. (1):—Mat. 4. 24: yfeihæbbende = male habentes.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (2):—

NSM. (2):—Mk. 11. 17: & he ßa lærende ßus cwæð = Et docebat, dicens eis.—Mat. 26. 27a: And he genam ßone calic ßanciende & sealde hym ßus cwæðende = Et accipiens calicem, gratias egiit, et dedit illis, dicens.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (2):—

NSM. (2):—L. 15. 13: & forspilde ßar his æhta, lybbende on his gelsan = et ibi dissipavit substantiam suam vivendo luxuriose;—L. 12. 25: ßenciende = cogitando.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):—

NSM. (1):—Mk. 9. 24: wepende cwæð = cum lacrymis aiebat.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin ablative absolute clause (1):—

NSM. (1):—L. 6. 20: ßa cwæð se heælend besiende to his leorning-cnihtum = Et ipse elevatis oculis in discipulos suos, dicebat.

6. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):—

NSM. (1):—Mk. 5. 40: He . . . ineode swigende (Hat. MS.) ßar ßæt mæden wæs = Ipse . . . ingreditur ubi etc.

NSF. (1):—L. 2. 51: And his modor geheold ealle ßas word on hyre heortan smeagende = Et mater ejus conservabat omnia verba in corde suo. [Cf. L. 2. 19, where smeagende = conferens.]
II. With an Object (122).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (117):

NSM. (57):—Mk. 1. 41: & his hand aðenode & hine ðæðode [Hat. MS. æðrinede] & þus cweð = extendit manum suam, et tangens eum, ait illi.—Mat. 10. 5*: Þas twelf se h. sende, him bebeodende = Hos duodecim misit J., præcipiens eis.—L. 3. 3: he com into eall iordanes rice bodiende dædbote fulluht & synna forgysnesse = venit in omnem regionem Iordanis, prædicans baptismum pœnitentiae in remissio:em peccatorum (or pred.?). So bodil(g)ende = prædicans in: Mat. 9. 35b, Mk. 1. 14 (or pred.?); = evangelizans in L. 8. 1b (or pred.?).—Mat. 9. 18: & ge-eaðmedde hyne to him, þus cweðende = et adorabat eum, dicens. So cweðende (cweðyndæ) = dicens in: Mat. 8. 6, 9. 29, 9. 30, 10. 5b, 13. 3, 13. 31, 26. 27b, 26. 44, 27. 11; Mk. 1. 15 (or pred.?), 9. 25; L. 23. 46; J. 1. 15, 1. 32.—Other examples:—L. 5. 13 (MS. A): aðenigende = extendens; behealdende = circumspiciens, Mk. 3. 34; ib. = intuits, Mk. 10. 21; Mk. 14. 13: berende = bajulans; Mk. 3. 5*: besceawiende = circumspiciens; Mk. 10. 23: beseonde hine = circumspiciens (without object);—biddende = rogans, Mat. 8. 5; ib. = deprecans, Mk. 1. 40; blestieende = beneficium, Mk. 14. 22, L. 1. 64; Mk. 5. 5: ceorfende = concidens (or pred.?); J. 6. 6: fandigende his = tantans eum; Mk. 8. 13: forlætende = dimittens; Mat. 9. 12: gehyrende = audiens; geseonde = videns, Mk. 9. 15*, L. 1. 12 (no obj. in Latin); L. 14. 7: gymende = intendens; hælende = habens: Mk. 3. 1, 9. 47, L. 4. 33, 7. 8b; Mat. 9. 35*: hælende = curans; L. 17. 15: mærstieende = magnificans; L. 4. 40: onsestende = imponens; L. 8. 1*: prediciende = prædicans (or pred.?); seconde = quærens: Mat. 12. 43, L. 11. 24, 13. 7 (or pred.?);—L. 3. 16: seeggende = dicens; Mk. 10. 16: settende = imponens; sliteonde = discerpens, Mk. 1. 26*, 9. 26b; ib. = scindens, Mk. 14. 63; L. 10. 39: upbe-seonde hine = suscipiens (no object); L. 18. 43: wuldrigende
= magnificans; L. 24. 12\textsuperscript{b}: wundrigende ðæs = mirans quod (or pred.).

NSF. (4):—Mat. 20. 20\textsuperscript{a,b}: ða com to him zebedeis bearna modor mid hyre bearnum hig ge-eadmedende & sum ðinge fram him biddende = Tunc accessit . . . mater, adorans et petens aliquid ab eo.—Other examples:—J. 11. 28: evedende = dicens; Mk. 7. 8: gehyrende = audientes.

NSN. (3):—L. 2. 23: ðæt ælc wæpned gecynd-lim ontynde byð drihtne halig genemnd = Quia omne masculinum adaperiens vulvam, sanctum Domino vocabitur.—Other examples:—Mk. 7. 19: eleusaigende = purgans; L. 7. 29\textsuperscript{a}: gehyrende = audientes.

NPM. (36):—Mk. 1. 5: & wæron . . . gefullode . . ., hyra synna andetende (MS. A.) = et baptizabantur . . ., confitentes peccata sua.—Other examples:—Mk. 6. 55: befarenende = percurrentes; Mk. 2. 3: berende = ferentes (or pred.?) ; L. 24. 53\textsuperscript{b}: bletsigende = benedicentes (or pred.?) ; Mat. 19. 3: costnigende hine = tentantes eum; —evedende = dicentes in: Mat. 6. 31, 8. 25, 9. 27, 10. 7, 10. 12, 12. 10, 12. 38, 27. 23, 27. 29, Mk. 3. 11, J. 11. 31;—demende = judicantes: Mat. 19. 28, L. 22. 30 (or both pred.?) ; fundi(g)ende his = tentantes eum: Mk. 10. 2, J. 8. 6; L. 24. 52: gebiddende = orantes (no obj. in Latin); L. 6. 35: gehehtende = sperantes; gehyrende = audientes: L. 4. 28, 8. 15; L. 20. 11: gevoæcende = afficientes; Mk. 7. 3: healdende = tenentes; heriende (hergende) = laudantes: L. 2. 20\textsuperscript{b} (or pred.?), 24. 53\textsuperscript{a} (or pred.?) ; L. 20. 47: hiwgende = simulantes; secende = quaerentes: Mat. 12. 46, 12. 47, L. 11. 54; ib. = requirentts: L. 2. 45; Mk. 7. 13: tosliitende = rescindentes; L. 23. 10: wregende = accusantes (or pred.?) ; L. 2. 20\textsuperscript{a}: wuldriende = glorificantes (or pred.?).

NPF. (3):—Mat. 9. 33: ðæa menigeo wundredon evedende = mirate sunt turbae, dicentes.—Other examples:—Mat. 15. 31\textsuperscript{a}: gesedond = videntes; Mat. 15. 30: hæbbende = habentes.

NPN. (4):—Mat. 8. 31: ðæa deoffa soðlice hyne bedon, ðus evedende = Dæmones autem rogabant eum, dicentes. So evedende = dicentia in L. 4. 41\textsuperscript{p}.—Other examples: L. 4.
41. *hrymende = clamantia; Mat. 27, 55: *senigende him = ministrantes ei.

NP. M. or N. (1):—L. 23. 49: cuðan & wif geseonde = videntes.

NDM. (1):—Mk. 11. 5: Hwæt do gyt ðone folan unto-gende? = Quid facitis solventes pullum?

DSM. (2):—L. 6. 48: He ys gelic *timbriendum men his hus = Similis est homini ðedicanti domum. Cf. L. 6. 49: He is gelic ðam *timbriendan men his hus ofer ða eorðan = similis est homini ðedicanti domum etc.

DPN. (1):—L. 7. 32c: Hi synt gelice cildum ... cwedendum = Similes sunt pueris ... dicentibus.

ASM. (5):—Mat. 8. 17: ðæt wære gefylled ðæt gecweden is ðurh seiaam ðone witegan, ðus cwedende = Ut adimpleretur quod dictum est per Isaiah prophetam, dicentem. So cwedende = dicentem in Mat. 12. 17, 27. 9.—Other examples: —Mk. 9. 17: *hebbende = habentem; L. 17. 7b: læsgendne = pascentem.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is generally either subordinate or in immediate connection with an appositive participle (3):—

NSM. (1):—Mat. 14. 19: besæah on ðone heofon & blestigende bræc ða hlafas = adspiciens in cœlum benedixit et fregit ... panes.

NSF. (1):—L. 18. 5: ðæ-læs heo æt neahstan cume me behropende = ne in novissimo veniens sugillet me (or pred.?).

NPM. (1):—Mk. 9. 15b: & hine gretende him to urnon = et accurrentes salutabant eum.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):—

NSM. (1):—Mat. 22. 35: axode hyne & fandode hys ðus cwedende = Et interrogavit eum unus ex eis legis doctor, tentans eum.

NSF. (1):—J. 12. 28: ða com stefn of heofone ðus cwedende = Venit ergo vox de cælo.
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (43).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (36).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (34):

NSM. (14):—Mk. 14. 51: Sum iungling him fyligde mid anre scytan beýæged nacod & hi namon hine = Adolecens autem quidam sequebatur eum amictus sindone super nudo.—Mk. 5. 30: he cwæð bewend to ðære menigu = conversus ad turbam aiebat. So bewend = conversus: L. 7. 9, 10. 23, 14. 25, 23. 28.—Other examples:—Mk. 9. 20: forgnyden = elisus; Mk. 5. 4: gebunden = vincitus; Mat. 2. 22: gemynegod = admonitus; gesett = constitutus: Mat. 8. 9, L. 7. 8*; Mk. 3. 5b: geunret = contristatus; L. 22. 32: gewend = conversus; Mat. 25. 25: ofdræd = timens (or pred.?).

NSF. (1):—Mat. 14. 8: Ða cwæð heo fram hyre meder gemyngod = At illa præmonito a matre sua . . . inquit.

NSN. (2):—L. 11. 17: Ælc rice on hyt sylf todæled byð toworpen = Omne regnum in se ipsum divisum desolabitur.—L. 10. 15: upahafen = exaltata.

NPM. (5):—L. 1. 74: ðæt we butan ege of ure seonda handa alysede him ðeowian = Ut sine timore, de manu . . . liberati, serviamus illi.—Other examples:—gefullo (gefulled) = baptizati, L. 7. 29*; 7. 30; L. 9. 31: gesewene = visi; Mat. 7. 6: gewende = conversi.

NPN. (1):—Mat. 26. 47: ða com iudas . . . & micel folc mid hym mid swurdum & sahlm asende fram . . . ealdrum = ecce Judas . . . venit, et cum eo turba multa cum gladiis et fustibus, missi a principibus etc.

DSN. (1):—Mat. 13. 47*: Eft is heofena rice gelic asendum nette on ða sæ = Iterum simile est regnum celorum sagene missæ in mare.

ASM. (7):—Mk. 16. 6: ge secað ðæne nazareniscan hæ-lend ahangenne = Jesum quæriris Nazarenum, crucifixum.—Other examples:—Mat. 27. 37: awrittenne = scriptam; Mk.
15. 17: awundenne = plectentes; Mk. 15. 15: beswungenne = caesum; L. 23. 16: gebetne = emendatum; Mat. 27. 16: gehaefte = vinctum; L. 7. 25: gescrydne = indutum.

ASF. (1):—L. 22. 12: he eow betsecS mycele healle gedcefte = ipse ostendet vobis coenaculum magnum stratum.

ASN. (2):—L. 6. 38: god gemet & full geheapod ... hig sylax = mensuram bonam, et confertam et coagitatam ... dabunt; Mat. 27. 34: gemenged = mixtum.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or in immediate connection with an appositive participle (1):

ASM. (1):—L. 20. 15: hig hine of sam wingearde awurpon ofsegene = ejectum illum extra vineam occiderunt.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (1):

NSF. (1):—L. 1. 28: hal wes ðu mid gyfe gefyllêd = Ave, gratia plena (or subst.).

II. WITH AN OBJECT (7).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (7):

NSM. (1):—Mk. 9. 31: & ofsegan sam ðriddan dæge he arist = et occisus tertia die resurget.

DSF. (1):—L. 1. 27: ðæs asend gabriel ... to bewed-dudre ðæs man anum were ðæs nama ðæs iosep = ... ad virginem desponsatam viro cui nomen erat J.

ASM. (3):—Mat. 11. 8: oððe hwi eode ge ut geseon mann hnescum gyrlum gescrydne? = Sed quid existis videre? hominem mollibus vestitum? So gescrydne = indutum: L. 23. 11; Mk. 16. 5: aferwrohne = co-opertum.

ASN. (1):—Mat. 11. 7: Hwi eode ge ut on wesðen geseon winde awegyd hreod? = Quid existis in desertum videre? arundinem vento agitatum?

APM. (1):—Mat. 4. 24: hi brohton him ealle yfel-hæbbende, missenlicum adlum & on tintegrum gesgripene =
obtulerunt ei omnes male habentes, variis languoribus et tormentis comprehendos.

Note: Examples of Participles hitherto cited as Appositive.

A. Erdmann (p. 26) considers bebeodende appositive in Matthew 11.1 (hyt wæs geworden ᵃa se hælynd ᵃys ge-endude hys twelf leorning-cnihtum bebeodende he for ᵃanun = factum est, quum consummasset Jesus precipiens duodecim discipulis suis, transit inde), and that ᵃys is the object of bebeodende; while Mätzner (III., p. 70) and March (§ 458) seem to hold that the participle here is used substantivally and is the object of ge-endude. To me, however, neither of these views seems tenable; I take ᵃys to be the object of bebeodende and the participle to be used predicatively after the intransitive verb of ending, as is common in Greek (cf. Goodwin, Gr. Grammar, § 1578) and as occurs in the Greek of this verse.

Again, Erdmann (p. 28) holds that gangende is appositive in Luke 9.34 (hi ondredon him gangende on ᵃet genip = timuerunt, intrantibus illis in nubem); but, as I have since tried to show (Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 13), the participle is more probably a crude absolute dative.

According to Erdmann (p. 28) ahsiene is possibly appositive in Mark 9.32 (hi adredon hine ahsiene = timebant interrogare eum), while Mätzner (III., p. 70) and March (§ 458) appear to look upon ahsiene as the substantival object of adredon. For several reasons, however, I believe that ahsiene is to be emended to ahsienne, which latter is the infinitive object of adredon. (1) We know that this confusion of infinitive and participial forms occurs in the Gospels (cf. above Mk. 1.5, where I give MS. A.’s andetende instead of the Corpus anddetenne). (2) We find the verb ondredan governing an inflected infinitive as direct object (cf. Mat. 1.20, 2.22, both cited by Erdmann). (3) ahsienne would correspond better with the infinitive of the Latin (and Greek) than would ahsiene.
In *Luke* 9. 55, Professor Bright, following MSS. B. and C., reads: *hine bewend, he hig þreade (= *conversus* *increpavit illos*), in which case *bewend* would be appositive. But, as we have no other instance in the *Gospels* of the past participle (*bewend*) governing an accusative, it seems better to read, with the remaining MSS., *bewende* (*bewente)*. The Lindisfarne and Rushworth Glosses likewise have a finite verb here. For the other occurrences of *bewend* in the *Gospels*, see NSM. under B, i., 1 above.

**WULFSTAN (28).**

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (9).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (3).

NSM. (1):—244. 7*: þæt is féder and sunu and halig gast and is an soð god *rixigende* and gemende ealra his gesceafa a butan ende.

NPM. (1):—295. 14: hi sculon *fleonde* on gefeohte beon ofslagene.

NPN. (1):—236. 26: and ða deoflu wendon *sceamigende* aweg.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (6).

NSM. (5):—199. 15: be þam awrat Iohannes . . . ðus cweðende. *Ib.* 201. 8, 246. 11, both immediately before a Latin quotation. [Only one other example of *cweðende* occurs in Wulfstan (see 105. 30 under NPM.). Wulfstan translates *dicens* (*dicentes*) twice by a co-ordinated finite verb (60. 14, 87. 15) and once by a subordinated finite verb (87. 18), while twice he leaves it untranslated (31. 32, 77. 3).]—244. 7b: þæt is féder and sunu and halig gast and is an soð 

*The past participle must however certainly be allowed to govern the accusative. I should still regard *hine bewend* as a servile translation of *conversus*, and the readings of Corp. and A. as representing steps in revision.—J. W. B.*
god rixigende and gemende ealra his gescealta a butan ende.—278. 9: and on ðam eahtoðan dæge manna gehwylc ham ferde mid fulre blisse gode æmhtigum ðancjende œære mærðe (or predicative?).

NPM. (1):—105. 30: we hine ænne ofer ealle ofre ðing luðjað and wurðjað mid gewissum geleafan cwedende etc.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (19).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (15).

NSM. (2):—25. 19: se ðe ðæne bryne ðurhferð unbesencged (or pred.?); 26. 7: gemenoged (or pred.?).

NPM. (7):—133. 5a & b: and ge tofesede swiðe afirhte oft litel werod earhlice forbugað = 131. 23: et animam ustram tabescentem faciam, et persequentur uos inimici uestri, et fugitis nullo persequente.—137. 18: and we beoð him ðonne faeringa beforan brohte æghwanon cumene to his ansyne.—Other examples:—gehadode (gehadede): 160. 1, 181. 29, 272. 21, 292. 30.

ASF. (5):—263. 4, 5, 6a & b: ðeah ðe ðæ mihtegestan and ða ricestan hatan him reste gewyrkan of marmanstane and mid goldfretwum and mid gimcynnnum eal astæned and mid seolfrenum ruwum and godwebbe eall oferwrigan and mid deorwyrtum wyrtgengnessum eal gestreded and mid goldleafum gestrewed ymbutan; 163. 6: gewylede.

AP. M. or F. (1):—46. 7: wa eow, he cwæð, ðe leegað togædere hamas and æhta on unriht begytene on æghwilce healfe.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (4).

NSM. (1):—48. 3: and forðam he sceal drefan dimne and deopne hellewites grund, helpes bedæled.

NPM. (3):—256. 12a & b: ac gewitað fram me, wuldre bedælde, freondum afyrede, feondum betæhte in ðam hatan wylme hellefyres.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 227

Note: Latin Participles in Wulfstan.—Thirty-four Latin participles occur in Wulfstan. Of these, twelve are untranslated (adorantes, 175. 14; audientes (twice), 42. 29, 47. 12; dicens (twice), 31. 32, 77. 3; egressus, 87. 10; elevatus, 31. 19; placentem, 31. 28; reatus, 63. 12; respondens, 87. 12; scribentes, 43. 9; sumentes, 30. 12); twelve are translated by a subordinated finite verb (accedens, 29. 11; agnosceens, 29. 15; audiens, 190. 11; dicens, 87. 18; fallens, 50. 19; habentes, 43. 15b; ponentes (twice), 42. 25, 26; sciens, 248. 9; sperantes (twice), 43. 15, 48. 6; tabescentes, 131. 30); and nine are translated by a co-ordinated finite verb (dans, 29. 21; dicens (twice), 60. 14, 87. 15; faciens, 248. 10; respondens (respondentes) ( thrice), 62. 3, 67. 23, 87. 16; reuerententes (twice), 44. 5, 49. 17).

BENET1 (142).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (103).

I. Without an Object (40).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (35):—

NSM. (12):—95. 10: niwan cumende (text: cumenne) sænig to gecyrrrednesse ne si him eðelic forgifsen infæreld = Noviter veniens quis ad conversionem non ei facilis tribuatur ingressus. So cumende = veniens: 80. 6, 95. 13.—Other examples:—4. 8: forseonde = respuens; 36. 2b: gangende = ambulans; 116. 15: gebetende = satisfaciens; 114. 14: getrewigende = confidens; 69. 5: ingangende = ingrediens; 68. 1: lufiænde = diligens; 36. 2a: sittende = sedens; 36. 2b: standende = stans; 57. 3b: ðurhwunigende = persistens.

NSF. (1):—2. 11: utan gehyran . . . olipiendo hwæt us myngie stefn = audiamus . . . clamans quid nos ammoneat vox.

NSN. (1):—9. 16: ðæt forme mynstermannæ ðæt is mynsterlic campiende under regule ðæsæce abbude = Primum
MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.

cœnobitarum hoc est monasteriale militans sub regula vel abbate.

NPM. (13):—55. 7: arisende soðlice to godes weorce . . .
gemedlice tihtan oððe laran = Surgentes vero ad opus dei
invicem se moderate cohortent. So arisende (arisænde) =
surgentes: 55. 4, 81. 16.—Other examples:—24. 12:
droh(t)igende = degentes; 106. 11: forahrædigende = pre-
venientes; 24. 11b: gangende = ambulantes; gecyrrende =
revertentes: 92. 14, 93. 2; 24. 10: libbende = viventes; 6.
12: Survhunigende = perseverantes; utgangende = exeuntes:
75. 5b, 81. 12, 93. 1.

NPM. M. or F. (1):—45. 7: gebyriende = pertinentes.

Note.—utgangendum (in 66. 15: ða utgangendum = egre-
dientes) is either absolute or substantive; in the latter case
read ða utgangdan.

GSM. (1):—25. 10: se ðe heortan his besceawað ceoriendes
= qui cor ejus respicit murmurantis.

GPM. (2):—69. 1: meosan etenda gebroðrum (read ge-
broðra) rædinc wana beon na scell = Mensis fratrum edentium
lectio deesse non debet; 78. 12: utgangendre = exeuntium.

DSM. (1):—13. 9: ðæt ahwenne him na sege symgendum
= nequando illi dicat deus peccanti.

DPM. (1):—118. 10: us asolcenum ð yfel lybbendum ð
gimeleasum scame gescyndynysse = nobis autem . . . male
viventibus . . . rubor confusionis est.

APM. (2):—21. 7: gðohtas ða yfelan heortan his to
becumende (text becumenne) sona to christe aslidan = Cogita-
tiones malas cordi suo advenientes mox ad christum allidere.
So ðumende = advenientes: 33. 5.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
adjective (2):

NSM. (1):—61. 6: hordere si gecoren of gegæderunge wis
. . . na upahafen [blank] drefende = Cellarius . . . eligatur
de congregatione sapiens . . . non elatus non turbulentus.

NPM. (1):—11. 2: ða . . . cumliðiað æfre worigende ð
næfre staðolfæste = qui . . . hospitantur semper vagi et
nunquam stabiles.
3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (3):

NSM. (3):—61. 11: forseonde hine he ne gedrefe = non sernendo eum contristet. [Cf. Benedict 1 54. 14: he ȝeah mid forseawennesse hine ne geunroste.]—114. 10* & b: his unaumenlicnesse se ȝe gewis [blank] ë gedafenlice [blank] na modigende [text: modigenne] ȝe grenade wiðstandende [blank] = impossibilitatis sue causas ei qui sibi preest patienter et oportune suggerat, non superbiendo aut resistendo vel contradicendo. [Cf. Benedict 1 128. 15, 16: ȝæt he eft mid géýlde on gedafenre tide his mægenleaste his ealdre gecyðe, he no ȝeah na wiðstande, ne mid modignesse ne wiðcwede.]

Note 1.—It is possible to construe forseonde, modigende, and wiðstandende above as appositive participles, but it is also possible that they may be used here precisely as the Latin gerunds are; that is, they may be verbal nouns in an oblique case instead of verbal adjectives in the nominative case. Certainly yrnende in the following is a verbal noun:

Benet 1 3. 15: . . . n ñæs rices healle on inne gyf we wyllaȝ [blank], buton [blank] mid godum dádom yrnende nateshwon ne bið becumem = (In) cujus regni tabernaculo si volumus habitare, nisi illuc bonis actibus currendo minime pervenitur. [Cf. Benedict 1 3. 9: Natosñæshwon his rices eardung bið gefaren buton mid gymane and gehealdsumnesse godra dáda; ofst and hradung godra weorc a is to ñæm rice weges fered.] In all probability, too, onginnende and standende, corresponding respectively to a Latin gerundive and gerund, are verbal nouns, not verbal adjectives, in the following:—

Benet 1 105. 5* & b: òfter endebyrdnesse ña ña he gesette ȝeðe ña ña habbað ña sylfan gebroðran hi ne genealscan [blank] to huselgange to on* sealmum ginnende on choro standende = Ergo secundum ordines quos constituerit vel quos habuerint ipsi fratres si [read sic] accedant ad pacem, ad communio ne, ad psalmum imponendum, in choro standum. * [Cf.

*As Logeman (foot-note to p. 105) says, on belongs with ginnende.
Benedict¹ 115. 4, 5: ... gange ælc after oðrum to cosse, to husle and be ðan on chore stande and sealmas and gehwylce ðenunga beginne.]

Note 2.—In the following the present participle that corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative seems in use to be a pure adverb:—Benet¹ 43. 4: ðæt is ðæt sig [blank] sungen buton antempne teonde æðwega swa swa on ðam sunnan die ðæge = id est, ut sexagesimus sextus psalmus dicatur sine antiphona subtrahendo modice sicut dominica. [Cf. Benedict¹ 37. 8: þæt is ðæt se syxandsyxtigeða sealm . . . sy geewedan butan antefene, and he sy on swege gelenøged hwæðhwara ealswa on sundandæge.]—Benet¹ 76. 3: ðane forði eallunga teonde latlice we wyliað beon gesæd = quem propter hoc omnino protrahendo et morose volumus dici. [Cf. Benedict¹ 68. 9: ðonne we eac forði on ðam sange lencgað.]

II. With an Object (63).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (62):—

NSM. (32):—68. 1: sig hus cyte ofer hi betæht þ þen adræedende [blank] þ luþiende = sit cella super se deputata, et servitor timens deum et diligens. [Here and occasionally at other places deum is not glossed, perhaps because of its familiarity.]—34. 6: gelyfe . . . geeaþðændende hine sylfne = credat . . . humilians se.—Other examples:—29. 11: asmai-dand (MS.: asmaidan) = scrutans (or predicative?); 16. 8: behiviende = dissimulans; 13. 8: oðrum bodiende = aliis predicans; 104. 16: bruçende (MS.: bruçenne) anwælde = ulens potestate; 111. 8: donde = faciens; 61. 7: dreaðende (MS. dreaðenne) = timens; 31. 16: geefelende = immittans; 5. 3: gefyllende = complens; 29. 3: gehealdende = custodiens; gehyrende = audiens: 3. 1, 17. 14; 35. 2: habbende = habens; 98. 11: healdende = reservans; 31. 10: luþiende = amans; 14. 14: mængende tidum tida = miscens temporibus tempora; 109. 5: nimende = sumens; 2. 16: seconde
= quærens; 28. 14: secende [sic!] = ponens; secgende = dicens: 36. 5, 78. 10; 16. 9: taliende (MS.: taliendre) = pendentis; 4. 7: tihtende (MS.: tihende) = suadentem; 109. 2: ćencende = cogitans; 36. 4: wenende = existimans; witende = scien: 15. 12, 19. 3, 57. 4*, 97. 5, 103. 14; 1. 8: wiđeweđende lustum = abrenuntians voluptatibus.

NSF. (1):—98. 6: ŝæt fers eall seo geđerung šriddan siđan togeđœodende [text: -enne] mid [blank] = Quem versum omnis congregatio tertio respondeat adjungentes gloria patri. [The A.-S. has nothing corresponding to the Latin respondeat. Of course, the A.-S. participle may be plural, as the Latin one is.]

NSN. (3):—27. 2: clypaď us gewritt ŝæt godecunda eala secende (= secgende) = Clamat nobis scriptura divina fratres dicens. So secgende = dicens: 30. 14.—32. 7: gesutuliendo = ostendens.


GSM. (3):—31. 11: ŝas stefne drihtnes mid dædum ac he gehefnłe secendes = sed vocem illam domini factis imitetur dicentis. So secendes = dicientis, 57. 4b. Cf. 109. 2b (șencende gescad ŝes halgan iacobes secende = cogitans discretionem sancti iacob dícentis.)

GPM. (1):—111. 5: swa hwænne swa geceost [blank] mid geđeahte [blank] ondrædendra gode etc. = quemeumque elegerit abba cum consilio fratrum timentium deum.
DSF. (1):—3. 8: est [sic] luempre [blank] (siss)ere stefne [blank] gelaðgendre la ge ða leofestan gebroðran = Quid dulcis nobis (ab h)ac voce domini invitantis.

ASM. (1):—107. 7: ðæt [blank] for his leahtrum . . . geðæfiendne (text: -enne) had mid gelicum geðæahete gif geæysð = Quod si etiam omnis congregatio vitiis suis . . . consentientem personam pari consilio elegerit.


2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (1):

NSM. (1):—31. 5: ariende = parcendo.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (39).

I. Without an Object (30).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (30):—

NSM. (15):—59. 6: ðæah ðe he amansumad hit ne gebet teartere genealæce ðræiungan = etiam si excommunicatus non emendaverit acrior ei accedat correptio.—Other examples:—

100. 3: bepæht (MS. bæpæhð) = deceptus; 68. 1º: fulfremed = sollicitus; 77. 13: geasindrod = sequestratus; 97. 17: gebeden = rogatus; 107. 14: gehadod = ordinatus; 78. 14: gehaten = iussus; 104. 6: geminegod = ammonitus; 54. 7º: geðreat = correptus; 2. 5: geyrsod = irritatus; 78. 11: pro ofered = stratus; 12. 11: tolysed = absolutus; 98. 17: unsoryd = exutus; upalafen = elatus: 59. 9, 61. 5.

NSF. (1):—36. 12: sona to ðære sooðan lufan godes becymð to ðære fulfremed ut seo asend ege = mox ad karitatem dei perveniet illum que perfecta foras mittit timorem.

NSN. (1):—70. 17: an pund awegen genihtsumige on dege = Panis libera una propensa sufficiat in die.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 233

NPM. (10):—10. 7: ða on ænigum regole na afandode vel [sic] oððe afundennessa lareowas . . . leogan gode . . . synd ænawene = qui nulla regula approbati experientia magistri . . . mentiri deo . . . noscuntur.—Other examples:—

113. 9: astreht (MS.: astrehð) = prostrati; 44. 11: gecyrde = conversi; 10. 1ª: gelærde = docti; 32. 14: genydde = angarizati; 76. 10: gesawene = visi; 75. 5ª: gesette = positi: 10. 1ª: getyde = instructi; 10. 9ª: nexode = molliti; 109. 15ª: tobraidde = inflati.

ASM. (2):—118. 12: ðysne ðane læstan acunnednesse regol awritenne fylstendum criste ðu gefremme = hanc minimam inchoationis regulam discriptam adjuvante christo perficias; 20. 10: gedonne = factam.

APF. (1):—92. 15: [b]rec ðas ða ða [blank] beoð asende on hrægelhuse niman ða hi gecyrrende geðwagenu ðara agenbringan = Femuralia hi qui in via diriguntur de vestario accipiant qui revertentes lota ibi restituunt. [Is the -u of geðwagenu due to lota, and is geðwagenu to be considered a neuter despite the gender of [b]rec?] 

Note.—In the following, gewunede and gedihte appear to be used as adverbs:—92. 16: cuflan ð tonican beon oðerhwilen synd gewunede sunt [sic] habban æthwigan beteran = Cuculle et tunice sint aliquanto solito quas habent modice meliores; 40. 11: sittendum eallum gedihte ð be endebyrdnyss on seemolum = residentibus cunctis dispose et per ordinem in subselliis.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (9).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (9):—

NSM. (1):—54. 7ª: ðæt ænig of ðam on sumere færunga tobraid modignesse gif bið gemet teallic etc. = Quod si quisque ex eis aliqua forte inflatus superbia repertus fuerit reprehensibilis etc.
GSF. (1):—16. 7: sæt he na sæt an nyðerunga æfyrðe heorde him sylfan befaestr sælige = ut non solum detrimenta gregis sibi commissi non patiatur.

GPF. (1):—16. 9: hæle saule him sylfan befaestra = saltem animarum sibi commissarum.

DSN. (1):—57. 3*: ana [blank] to weorc [blank] to beæhtum = Solus sit ad opus sibi inunctum.

DPM. (1):—31. 1: ã gif fram englum [blank] betehtum = et si ab angelis nobis deputatis.

DPN. (1):—75. 4: on ãam sylfum betehtum him sylfum ãingum = in assignato sibi commisso.

ASM. (1):—104. 4: se [blank] regol fram decanum ðeðe fram pravostum him sylfan gesetne gehealden wite = qui tamen regulam a decanis vel prepositis sibi constitutam servare seiat.

ASF. (2):—104. 15: se ne abbod gedrefe befaeste him sylfum heorde = Qui Abbas non conturbet gregem sibi commissam; 62. 15: him betæhte = sibi commissum.

II.—IN THE POEMS.

A.—LONGER POEMS.

BEOWULF (91).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (23).

I. Without an Object (19).

NSM. (9):—2272: se ðe byrnende biorgas secede; ib. 2569 (or pred.?); 815: wæs gehwæðer oðrum lifigende lað.—
Other examples:—2219: slepende; 2235: ðanchyegende; 2548: unbyrnende; 708: waoccende; 2062: wigende (or lifigende?); 2716: wishyegende.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 235

NSF. (1):—1953: ðær hio siððan wel . . . lifgesceafta lifigende breac.
NPM. (2):—916: Hwilum flitende fealwe stræte mearum mæton; 2850: hy seamiende scyldas bær.
N. Dual M. (1):—535: Wit sæt gecwædon enihtwesende.
DSM. (2):—1389: sæt bið drihtguman unlijfgynde æfter selest; 1187: gif he sæt eal gemon, hwæt wit to willan and to worðmyndum umbor-wesendum ær arna gefремedon (or subst. here?).
ASM. (3):—2781: ligegeisan wæg hatne for horde, hiorowcallende; 372: Ic hine cuðe enihtwesende; 46: ðe hine sæt frumseacfe forð onsendon ænne ofer yðe umbor wesende.
APM. (1):—1581: slæpended fræt folces Denigea fyftyne men.

II. WITH OBJECT (4).

NSM. (3):—2106: gomela Sçilding fela fricgende feorran rehte (but Köhler considers fela an adverb); 2350: for ðon he ær fela nearo neðende niða gedigde; 1227: Beo ðu suna minum dæendum gedefe dream healdende. [Should we not write dream-healdende, as Grein does in his Glossary? Cf. dream-hæbbendra in Genesis 81. Köhler considers healdende as substantivized.]
NPM. (1):—1829: Gif ic sæt gefriçe ofer floda begang, sæt ðec ymbesittend egesan ðywæð, swa ðec hetende hwilum dydon, ic ðe susenda ðegna bringe, hæleða to helpe (or a substantivized participle, as Köhler holds).

B.—THE PÆTERITE PARTICIPLE (68).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (18).

NSM. (9):—1351: oðer earmsceapen on wereæ wesstmum wæclastas træd (may be considered substantivized as by Köhler); 2569: Gewat ða byrnende gebogen scríðan (or pred.?); 846: hu he . . . on nicera mere fæge and geftymed
feorhlastas bær; ib. 1370; 2852: He gewergad sæt; 868: guma gilphlæden or attrib.?; 262: Wæs min feder folcum gecyfæd, æðele ordfruma Ecgæow haten (may be pred.); 1913: Ceol up gesæng, lytftgeswenced on lande stod; 2443: sceolde hwaðre swa ðæah æðeling unwrecen ealdres linnan.

NSF. (2):—614: oven Hroðgares . . . grette goldhroden guman on healle; ib. 1948.

NSN. (1):—3012: ac ðær is maðma hord, gold unirime grimme gecæpod (may be pred.).

NS. M. or N. (1):—3085: Hord is gesceawod, grimme gegongen.

NPM. (1):—1819: we sælīsənd secgan wyllað, seorræn cumene, sæt etc.

NPN. (2):—59: ðæm feower bearne forð gerimed in woruld wocun.—Other examples:—3049: ðurhetone (or pred.).

DSM. (1):—1479: sæt ðu me a wære forðgewitenum on fæder stele (cf. Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 16).

APF. (1):—1937: ac him vælbanede weotode tealde, handgewriðene.

II. With an Object (50).

NSM. (27):—1113: wæs eðgesyne . . . æðeling manig wundum awyrded; 721: Com . . . rinc siðian dreamum bedæled; ib. 1275.—Other examples:—1451: beføngen freawrasnum; 2274: fyre beføngen; ib. 2595; 531: beore drunegen; 1467: wine ——; 2580: bysigum gebæded; 3117: strengum gebæded; 2359: bille gebæten; 2401: tørne gebolgen; 2111: eldo gebunden; 923: cystum gecyfæd; 217: winde gefyshed; 630: guðe gefyshed; 2309: fyre gefyshed; 1005: ðyðe genyded (Wülckerhas genydde); 975: synnum geswenced; 1368: hundum geswenced; 1285: hamere geþuren; 250: wæþnum geworðad; 1450: since ——; 1038: since gewurðad; 1645: dome ——; 2255: hyrsted golde; 845: niða ofercumen.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 237

NSF. (5):—1443: scolde herebyrne hondum *gebroden*, sid and searofah sund cunnian.—Other examples:—3018: golde *bereafod*; 1333: fylle *gef(r)ægnod*; 777: golde *geregnad*; 624: mode *geængen*.

NSN. (5):—553: beadohrægl...on breostum læg, golde *gegyrved*.—Other examples:—2680: niðe *genyded*; 2764: searwum *gesæld*; 2441: fyrenum *gesængad*; 406: sceowed smiðes orðancum.

NS. M. or N. (1): 3146: astah...swogende leg wope *bewunden*.

NPM. (3):—1126: Gewiton him ða wigend wica neosian freondum *bealleæn* Frysland geseon; 480: Ful oft gebeotedon beore *druncene* ofer ealowæge oretmeegas.—Other examples:—

3014: ðeore *gebohte*.

ASM. (1):—3139: Him ða gegeiredan Geata leode ad on eorðan unwaelclicne, helmum *behongen*.

ASF. (2):—2931: bryd aheorde, gomela iomeowlan golde *berofene*.—Other examples:—2192: golde *gegyrede*.

ASN. (2):—1900: He ðæm batwearde *bunden* golde swurd gesealde; 1531: wearp ða wundenmæl wrættum *gebunden* yrre oretta (though some consider *gebunden* as nom.).

AS. M. or N. (1):—2769: Swylce he siomian geseah segn eallgylden, ... *gelocen* leoðocræftum.

APM. (1):—1028: ne gefrægn ic freondlicor feower mad-mas golde *gegyrede* gummanna fela in ealobence oðrum gesellan.

APN. (2):—2762: Geseah... fyrmanna fæt feormende-lease hyrstum *behrorene*; 871: soðe *gebunden*.

Note 1.—Köhler reads ealo *drincende* in 1945, and considers *drincende* an appositive participle; I retain Wülker’s ealo*drincende*, which is a substantive.

Note 2.—The text is too defective to admit of classifying the following: 304: *gebroden*; 1031: *bewunden*; 2229: *earmsceapen*; 2230: *sceapen*; 3151: *wunden*.
A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (10).

I. Without Object (10).

NSM. (3):—1583: ac he hlīhende brodrum sägede.—Other examples:—874: sceomìende; 347: sorgiende.
NSF. (1):—890: ġūsiende.
NSN. (1):—560: wīllende.
NPM. (1):—2066: hlīhende.
GPF. (1):—81: ðrymmas lēowx on duguða mid drīhtne
   dreamhæbbendra.
DSM. (2):—2663: ðæt ic ðe līssa lifigendum giȝt on dagum
   læte duguða brucan, sincec gesundne; 2649: Me sägede ær
   ðæt wif hire wordum selfa unfrigendum, ðæt etc.
ASM. (1):—2169: ac ic ðe lifigende her wīð weana ge-
   hwam wreo þ scylde.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (32).

I. Without Object (11).

NSM. (4):—1571: Swiðe on slæpe sefa nearwode, ðæt he
   ne mihte on gemynd drepen hine handum self mid hrægel
   wryon.—Other examples:—725: gehugod; 481: gewanod;
   1799: haten (may be pred., as Seyfarth holds).
GPM. (1):—1836: feorren cumenra.
GPN. (1):—1185: wintra gebidenra etc.
ASM. (1):—1865: geðreadne.
ASF. (2):—165: æceowde; 549: gesceapene (or pred.?).
ASN. (1):—2022: forslegin (or attrib.?).
APN. (1):—1520: besmitten.

II. With Object (21).

NSM. (9):—930: dugeðum bedæled; 2099: eorlum bed-
   drøren; 2124: seegum befyllæd; 2605: wine druncen;
1818: drihtne *gecoren*; 2668: egesan *gebæread*; 2137: elne *gewurðod*; 32: niðes of *þyrsted*; 2740: hleowfeðrum *ðeaht* (or pred.?).

NPM. (5):—86: leohete *belorene*; 76: ðystrum beðseahhte; 1734: metode *gecorene*; 1693: hleowðrum *gæðælte*; 2002: eçgum of *ðegde*.

NPF. (2):—2082: dome *bedrorene*; 2010: freondum be-*slægene*.


ASN. (2):—1263: hundtwelfig *geteled* rime wintra; 2344: *geteled* rimes.

APN. (1):—1336: *þu* seofone genim on *þæt* sundreced tudra gehwilces *geteled* rimes.

Note.—Seyfarth considers the following as appositive participles:—183: *unwundod*, 319: *fylde*, 1472: *liðend*, 2480: *þearfende*. But, in *The Abs. Ptc. in A.-S.* (p. 17), I have shown that *unwundod* is used predicatively, and that *fylde* is a finite verb. The form of *liðend* seems to me to show that it is a substantive. I consider that *þearfende* is used substantively, as does Dietrich (quoted by Wülker).—In 2603, *genearwod*, the text is too defective to admit of classification.

**Exodus** (12).

A.—The Present Participle (3).

I. Without Object (3).

NSF. (1):—213: *Wæccende* bad eall seo *þibgedriht* somod *þætgædere maran mægenes*.

NPM. (2):—452: flugon *forhtigende* (or pred.?) 264: *liðigende*.

B.—The Preterite Participle (9).

I. Without Object (3).

NPN. (1):—497: *synfullra sweot sawlum lunnon fæste befarene*.
ASM. (1):—412: unweaxenne.
ASN. (1):—232: x. hund geteled tireadigra.

II. With Object (6).

NSM. (3):—532\(^2\): wrecceum alyfed; 532\(^1\): wommum awyrged; 549: mihtum swid\(e\)d.
NSF. (1):—580: golde geweor\(\dot{\theta}\)od.
NPM. (1):—36: swæfon seledreamas since berofene.
ASN. (1):—372: geteled rime.

DANIEL (13).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (5).

I. Without Object (3).

NSM. (2):—687: hamsittende (or attrib.,?); 573: lifgende.
NPM. (1):—296\(^2\): lifgende.

II. With Object (2).

NSM. (2):—355: sær sæ dædhwatan geond ðone ofen eodon ḟ se engel mid, feorh nerigende; 396: sec . . . gastos lófað lifriean, lean sellende callum . . . [defective ms.] ece drihten.

B.—THE PREDERITE PARTICIPLE (8).

I. Without Object (1).

ASM. (1):—521: gesæledne.

II. With Object (7).

NSM. (3):—736: drihtne gecoren; 184\(^2\): mode gefreenod; 184\(^1\): mane gemenged.
NSN. (1):—556: treow . . . telgum beinœded.
NPM. (3):—296\(^1\): lige belegde; 92: metode gecorene; 259: aldre genede.
Note.—Spaeth considers 696 (Sæton him sæt wine wealle belecene) as appositive, but the participle is rather predicative after sæton.

**CYNEWULF’S CHRIST (65).**

**A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (14).**

**I. Without Object (13).**

NSM. (3):—176: Hwæt bemurnest ðu, cleopast cearamende?—Other examples:—426: forðgongende; 1324: unseonmende.

NSF. (4):—1160: Hell eac ongeat scealwiuintende sæt etc.; 1016: sorgende; 1584: scriðende; 288: ðristhygengende.

NPM. (4):—950: breconde; 387: bremende; 90: geomrunde; 992: wænende.


ASM. (1):—1391: ða ic ðe on ða fægran foldan gesette to neotenne neorxnaowonges beorhtne blædwelan, bleom seinende.

**II. With Object (1).**

NPM. (1):—1271: on ðam hi awo sculon wraewinnende wærg demás dreogan. [Grein¹ and Gollancz¹ &² write as a compound, wraewinnende.]

**B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (51).**

**I. Without Object (15).**

NSM. (2):—475: aewæð Waldend engla, gefysed, Frea mihtig, to Fæder rice; 970: Grornæð gesargad eal mid-dangeard (but Hertel considers it predicative after an intransitive verb).

NSF. (3):—1065: arcered; 1087: biseon (or pred.);

380: geblissad.

NSN. (2):—218: acenned; 961: gesargad.
NPM. (3):—1229: arasode; 1298\(^1\): ascamode; 1274: fordone.
NPN. (2):—1223: Þonne beoð gesomnad ða clenan folc . . . gecorene bi ðystum; 1071: Þonne weoroda mæst ðore Waldende, ece and edgeong, ondweard gæð, neode ond nyde bi noman gehatne (may be masc., as Cook gives it).
GPM. (1):—179: Ñe ic culpan in þe, incan æigne æfre onsfunde, womma geworhtra.
ASN. (1):—890: mon mæg sorgende folc gehyran, hyge-geomor, hearde gefysed, earum cwiðende cwicra gewyrhtu, forhte afærede.
APN. (1):—892: afærede (quoted under ASN. 889 above).

II. With Object (36).

NSM. (6):—625: ond to þære ilcan scealt eft geweorðan wurnum aweallen.—Other examples:—725: claðum bewunden (or pred.?); 1407: bidæled dugeðum ond dreamum; 1432: mane—; 1206: deaðfirenum fordene; 10:5 monnum sended.
NSF. (4):—192: Þonne sceal Dauides dohtor sweltan, stanum astyrfed.—Other examples:—1085: blode bestemed (or pred.?); 908: gebloed wundrum; 292: beaga hroden.
NS. N. or M. (1):—1139: ðæs temples segl, wundorbleom geworht to wîte ðæs huses, sylf slat on tu.
NPM. (21):—940: steorran swa some stredað of heofone, ðurh ða strongan lyft stormum abeatne.—Other examples:—1525: rædum birosene; 1519: willum biscyrede; 1643\(^2\): sorgum biwerede; 1643\(^1\): sibsum bisweðede; 831: wælum biwrecene; 1642: leohte biwundne; 1103: fiirenum fordene; 1356: adle gebundne; 1538: lege gebundne; 993: hreowum gedreahte; 1298\(^2\): seondum—; 1508: drynces—; 1644\(^1\): dreamum gedyrde; 393: swegle gehyrste; 1644\(^2\): Dryhtne getlyfde; 149: suslum geslæhte; 385: dome gswiðde; 986: sundes getwæfde; 1509: ðurste gedegede; 447: hræglum gewerede.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 243

GSM. (1) :—20: Eadga us siges oðrum forwynned, wlitigan wilsidæ, gif his weorc ne deag.
DPM. (1) :—151: bring us hælolf wergum wite-þeowum, wope forcyumenum.
ASF. (1) :—120: Nu we hyhtsfulle hælo gelyfað ðurh sæt Word Godes weorodum brungen.
APM. (1) :—873: slaþe gehundrede.

Note.—In 891 (mon mæg sorgende folc gehyran, hyge-geomor, hearde gefysed, earum cwœnde cwicra gewyrhtu), Hertel considers cwœnde appositive, but to me it seems to be used predicatively as a second accusative.

ELENE (26).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (9).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (7).

NSM. (3) :—352: swa hit eft be eow Essaias ... wordum melde, deophyegende ðurh dryhtnes gast; ib. 881; 951: wiðerhyegende.

NSF. (1) :—449: Ne mæg ... Ebrea þeod ræðþæahende rice healdan.
NPF. (1) :—906: sawla ne moton manfremmende in minum leng æhtum wunigan.

DSM. (1) :—810: Sie þe, mægena god, ðyrmsittendum ðanc butan ende.
ASM. (1) :—795: Forlæt nu ... wynsumne up under radores ryne rec astigan lytlacende.

II. WITH OBJECT (2).

GPM. (1) :—1096: ða se halga ... eode gumena ðreate god hergendra.
DPM. (1) :—1220: ða eallum bebead on ðam gumrice god hergendum, werum and wifum, sæt etc. (Schürmann: substantivized).
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (17).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (3).

NSN. (1):—1226: mærost beama, ðara ðe of eordan up awexe geloden under leafum.

GPM. (1):—992: Ñæs ða frigendra under goldhoman gad in burgum feorran geferede [Sievers as quoted by Wülker: geferedra?].

ASM. (1):—529: mec fæder min ... unweaxenne wordum lærde.

II. WITH OBJECT (14).

NSM. (6):—697: cleopigan ongan sarum besyled.—Other examples:—932: sarum forsoht; 1128: egesan geaclod; 720: hungre gehyned; 1263: wirum gewlenced; 1094: breostum onbryrded.

NSF. (1):—331: on ðrymme bad . . . geatolic guðcwen golde gehyrsted.

NSN. (2):—2: Ða wæs agangen geara hwyrftum tu hund þ þreamo geteled rimes; 634: geteled rime.

GPN. (1):—1284: Sceall seghwylc . . . worda swa same wed gesyllan, callra unsnyttro ær gesprecenra.

Note.—Schürmann (p. 368) considers the following appositive, but I substantive:—279: meðelhegende; 395: synwyrcende. On the other hand, as the statistics show, I have classified as appositive participles several words that he considers as substantives.
I. Without Object (10).

NSM. (5):—68: Da reordode rices hyrde wið sære fæmnan fæder frecne mode daraðæbbende; 281: lyft-lacende; 137: Æe Æu hæstlice manfremmende to me beotast (or subst.?); 445: sceal nu lange ofer Æis sceylwyrcende scame Ærowian; 261: wiðænde.

NSF. (1):—252: gleawhyegende.

NSN. (1):—648: ic leof weorud læran wille æfremmende, etc.

NPM. (1):—662: væxcende.

DSF. (1):—196: wiðerhyegendre.

ASM. (1):—435: ðrymsittendne (cf. Phœnix 623).

II. With Object (1).

GPM. (1):—6: geat on græswong god hergendra hæðen hildfruma haligra blod ryhtfremmendra. [Gollancz has god-hergend[r]a, in which case we have a substantive.]

B.—The Preterite Participle (17).

I. Without Object (7).

NSM. (5):—411: acyrred; 320: afongen; 417: bifolen; 262: geðungen; 262²: sended (or pred., as Conradi holds?).

GPN. (1):—686: witedra.

ASM. (1):—617: awyrgedne.

II. With Object (10).

NSM. (4):—350: facne bifongen; 203: niða gebæded; ib. 462; 582: yrre gebolgen.
NSF. (2):—241: heolstre bihelmad; 535: breostum inbryrded.

NPM. (4):—681: hroðra bidæled hyhta lease helle sohton.—Other examples:—486: beore druncne; 13: dæ-dum gedwolene; 490: sarum gesohte.

GUTHLAC (42).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (11).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (10).

NSM. (1):—1085: lac onsægte deophyegende dryhtne to willan.

NPM. (7):—203: sceoldon wræcmægas ofgiesfan gnornende grene beorgas; ib. 651; 117: sonan sið tugon, wide waðe wuldre besøyrede lyfilacende.—Other examples:—401: murnende; 828: scudende; 879: wedende; 635: wiðerhyegende.

NPF. (1):—1250: wyṛta... hunigflowende.

GSM. (1):—1190: neosendes.

II. WITH OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—1029: ac he hate let torn soliende tears geotan. [Furkert considers soliende predicative after let, but incorrectly I think. Cf. Judith 272.]

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (31).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (8).

NSM. (5):—911: Hredeðer innan born afysæd on forðsið. — Other examples:—1286: aræred; 662: gegeaurwæd; 1287: gesæwen; 913: ungeblyged.

NSN. (1):—1282: lic colode belifil under lyfte.

NPF. (1):—1249: wyṛta geblowene.

NPN. (1):—1263: scadu sweðredon tolæsed under lyfte.
II. With Object (23).

NSM. (8):—1127: awrecen wælpilum; 1260:...wælstræ-lum; 967: fæsce bifongen; 1143: leana biloren; 1004: foldærne biðeæht; 640: attre geblonden; 1126: nearwum geæged; 1274: husle gereorded.

NSF. (1):—1325:—ðonne seo ðrag ðymeð wefen wyrdstafum (or pred.).

NSN. (1):—888: him to honda hungre geðreatad fleag fugla cyn.

NPM. (7):—116: wuldre byscyrede; 873: dreamum bidro-renæ; 872: hiwes binotene; 1047: wilna biscirede; 645: wuldre biscyrede; 858: adle gebundne; 1046: ac in lige sceolon sorgwylmum soden sar wanian.

NPN. (2):—930: leomu hefegedon sarum gesohte; ib. 1003.

ASM. (3):—1312: life bilidenne; 992: is me ... geðuht, ðæt ðe untrymnes adle gongum on ðisse nyhstan niht bysgade, sarbennum gesoht; 1118: feorhhord onleac searocægum gesoht.

APM. (1):—740: leohete geræhte.

RIDDLES (44).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (8).

I. Without Object (8).

NSM. (4):—13. 14: lifgende; ib. 29. 9; 3. 8: winnende; 41. 107: wrotenende.

NSN. (1):—49. 4: sinc for sec gum swigende cwæð.

NS. F. or N. (1):—84. 5: wiht...ferende.

NPM. (1):—17. 6: hi beoð swiðran ðonne ic ð mec slitende sono flymað.

GSF. (1):—55. 5: stondendre.
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (36).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (9).

NSM. (4):—72. 12: bunden; 24. 16: searosæled; 2. 11: sended; 24. 15: unbunden.
NS. F. or N. (1):—24. 2: ic eom wrætic wiht on gewin sceapen.
NSN. (1):—31. 21: bewunden.
NPM. (1):—12. 61: gemædde.

II. WITH OBJECT (27).

NSM. (12):—28. 14: mægene binumen; 28. 13: strengo bistolen; 3. 9: holmmægene biðeaht; 18. 2: gefylled dryht-gestreona (or pred.?); 2. 10: holme gehrefed; 71. 8: hringum gehyrsted; 4. 66: meahtum gemanad; 41. 85: gewefen wundorcraete; 91. 4: hringum gyrded; 5. 2: hringum hæfted; 11. 4: yðum þeahn; ib. 17. 3.
NSF. (5):—27. 6: sindrum begrunden; 71. 1: reade bewæfet (or pred.?); 32. 20: frætved hyrstum; 4. 22: eare geblonden; 32. 10: ge coren cræftum.
NSN. (2):—31. 3: fyre gebysgard (or pred.?); 31. 2²: wedre gesomnad (or pred.?).
NPM. (4):—14. 8: meahtum aweahete; 12. 6²: mode bestolene; 14. 7: reafe birofene; 12. 7: dæde gedwolene.
NPN. (1):—27. 14: wæretlic weorc smiða wire bifongen.
ASF. (1):—87. 2: wombe ðryðum geðrungne.
ASN. (2):—24. 8: spilde ge blonden; 30. 3: listum gegierwed.

Note 1.—Two Latin appositive participles occur in the Riddles, but are not translated into Anglo-Saxon:—90. 4¹ & 2: Dum starem et mirarem, vidi gloriam magnam: duo lupi stantes et tertium tribul[antes] III pedes habebant, cum septem oculis videbant.
THE APPOSITIONAL PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 249

Note 2.—The defective text precludes the classification of the following:—78. 7: bewrigene; 83. 3 and 4: life bewunden, fyre gefælsad; 84. 40: wuldrum gewlitegad.

ANDREAS (33).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (7).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (4).

NSM. (3):—1557: hean, hygegeomor, heofende spræc; 378: ænig ne wende, sæt he lifyende land begete; 59: He ða wepende weregum tearum his sigedryhten sargan reorde, grette.

GSM. (1):—528: ðu cyninges eart ðegen... ðrymsittendes.

II. WITH OBJECT (3).

NSM. (2):—570: Æðelinge weox word ð wisdom, ah he ðara wundra a dom agende ðæl ænigne frætre ðæode beforan cyðde; 300: Him ða ofstlice Andreas wið wine ðearfende wordum melde (cf. Guthlac 1321, where wineðearfende is substantive).

DPF. (1):—491: Ðc wæs on gifeðe iu ð nu syxtyne siðum on sæbate, mere hrerendum mundum freorig, eagorstreamas.

B.—THE PTERITE PARTICIPLE (26).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (12).

NSM. (6):—78: ðy læs ic lungre scyle ablended in burgum... leng ðrowian.—Other examples:—1299: averged; 267: bewunden; 1127: gehæfted; 4362: gedreaterd; 4361: gedyd.

NSN. (1):—1529: sund grunde onsfeng deope gedrefed.

NPM. (1):—665: næs ðær folces ma... sinra leoda nemne ellefne orettmæcgas, geteled tireadige.

GPM. (1):—24: hie blod and fel, fira flæschoman feorran cumenra ðegen.
ASM. (1):—1651: Ær se ar gode anne gesette wisfæstne wer, ... ï gehal gode. ... , Platan nemned.

ASF. (1):—646: ic on ðe sylfum soð oncnawe wisdomes gewit wundorcwæfte, sigesped gesæld (or fact.?).

APM. (1):—883: swylce we gesegon for suna meotudes ... eowic standan, twelfe getealde, tireadige hæleð.

II. WITH OBJECT (14).

NSM. (5):—309: sæt ðu sæbeorgas secan woldes, mear-streama gemet, mæðum bedæled.—Other examples:—1314: dugudum bedæfu; 413: billum foregrunden; 983: elne gefyrðred; 1313: myrce gescyrded.

NSN. (1):—772: morðre bewunden.

NPM. (4):—1631: witum aspedde; 1618: wuldre bescyrede; 1003: dreore druncne; 746: mode gemyrde.

DSM. (1):—487: sæt ðu me getæhte ... hu ðu wægflotan ware bestendon, sehengeste sund wisige.

ASF. (1):—675: he lungre ahof woðe ... wean onblonden.

ASN. (1):—1035: gelædde ... on frið dryhtnes tu ði hundteontig geteled rime (cf. Andr. 665 and Elene 2, 634).

APN. (1):—1046: weorod on wilsð wolcnum beðehte.

Note.—The ms. is too defective to classify 1025: gewyrht.

PHŒNIX (26).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (4).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (4).

NSM. (1):—368: forðon he drusende deað ne bisorgað.

NSF. (1):—502: ðonne ðeos woruld scoyledwyrênde in scome byrneð.

GPM. (1):—178: ealra beama on eordwege uplædendra.

DSM. (1):—623: ond ðe ðone sy ðrymsittendum. Cf. Summons to Prayer 2: ðrymeçyninge thronum sedens; and ib. 25: to ðæodne thronum regenti.
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (22).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (7).

NSM. (3):—525: *afæred*; 180: *gescylded*; 160: *geþungen*.
NPM. (1):—592: *gebrédad*.
NPF. (2):—226: *geþungne*; 541: *gecorene*.
ASN. (1):—274: *geþrætwed*.

II. WITH OBJECT (15).

NSM. (9):—535: *fæscæ bifongen*; 306: *bregden feðrum*;
602: *brogden wundrum*; 140: *sœlum geblissad*; 27: *wynnum geblœwen*; 162: *wintrum gebysgað*; 486: *wapnum geþryðed*; 551: *wuldræ geweorðad*; 550: *breostum onbryrðed*.
NSF. (1):—503: *ade onæled*.
NSN. (1):—62: *lyfte gebysgað*.
NPM. (1):—633: *manes amerede*.
ASF. (2):—170¹: *biholene þ bihydde monegum*.
APM. (1):—488: *sawlum binumene*.

METRES OF BOETHIUS (13).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (6).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (6).

NSM. (1):—2. 2: *Hwæt ic lioða fela lustlice geo sang on sœlum! nu sceal sioðigende wope gewæged wreccea giomor singan sarcwïdas = Boeth.*² 3. 2: *Carmina qui quondam studio florente peregi, flebilis in mæstos cogor inire modos*.
NSF. (3):—20. 221: *ðonne hio ymb hi selfe secende smeæð*; *ib* 20. 214; 20. 212: *hwærfeð ymbe hy selfe oft smeagende ymb etc.*
NSN. (1):—3. 4: *ðonne hit winnende his agen leocht anforlæted*.
NPF. (1):—11, 34: Swa hæfð geheaðerod hefonrices weard mid his anwealde ealle gesceaftra, þæt hiora æghwile wið oðer winð, ðæah winnde weðerð þe seost þæt seost swæge ðæþ heorðe æuffsæð fæste = Boeth.²

48. 3: Quod pugnantia semina foedus perpetuum tenent.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (7).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (4).

NSM. (1):—1. 82: forðoht.
NSF. (1):—6. 15: geondstyred.
NPM. (1):—25. 7: ymbestandne = Boeth.² 95. 2: sæptos.
APM. (1):—19. 4: alwæd (perhaps should be alwædeð, as Grein conjectures).

II. WITH OBJECT (3).

NSM. (1):—2. 3: wope gewæged (see Latin under 2. 2 above).
NSN. (1):—3. 8: sorgum geswenced.
NPM. (1):—25. 6: golde geğerede.

THE METRICAL PSALMS¹ (37).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (17).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (13).

NSM. (2):—50. 75 (Cot.): ðonne ic . . . ofer snaewe self scinende ðinre sibbe lufan sóna gemetæ = et super nivem dealbabor; 77. 65¹: slæpendæ = dormiens.
NPM. (5):—50. 56 (Cot.): cerrendæ = q; 125. 5¹ & ²: gangende þ ferende georne wepað = eunte ibant et flebant; 146. 10: se ðe mete syleð manegum neatum, hreñes brettum, ðonne heo hropende him cigeað to = Qui dat jumentis escam ipsorum, et pullis corvorum invocantibus eum; 113. 25: lifigende = qui vivimus.
DSN. (1) :— 82. 6 : mid *eardiendum* folce in Tyrum =
*habitantibus* Tyrum.

DPM. (1) :— 140. 6 : mid mannum *manfremendum* = cum
hominibus *operantibus* inquitatem.

ASN. (2) :— 140. 4 : sete swæse geheald swylce, drihten,
muðe minum (ne læt man sprecan) ð æðele dor ymb-
*standende*, ðæt on welerum wisdom healde = Pone, Domine,
custodiam ori meo; et ostium *circumstantiae* labiis meis; 57.
6 : *yrnende* = *currens*.

APM. (2) :— 68. 25 : *gramhiogende* = o; 123. 2 : *liżgende* =
*vivos*.

II. With Object (4).

NSM. (2) :—104. 10 : and him ða mid soðe sægde,
*ewxende* = *Et statuit*. . . . *dicens*; 105. 4 : Gemune us,
drihten, on modsefan forð *hyegende* folces ðines ð us
mid hælo her geneosa = Memento nostri, Domine, in bene-
placito populi tui; *visita nos* in salutari tuo.

NPM. (1) :—138. 17 : Blodhreowe weras! ge bebugaS me,
ðe ðæt on geðehtum ðeneað *ewxende* = *Viri sanguinum*
declinate a me; quia *dicitis* in cogitationibus vestris.

GSM. (1) :—105. 17 : Hi . . . ongunnan . . . onwendan
heora wuldor on ðæne wyrsan had hæðenystyrces hig
*etendes* = et mutaverunt gloriam suam in similitudinem
*comedentis* foenum.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (20).

I. Without Object (9).

NSM. (3) :—115. 6 : *sïnre sæowan* sunu on ðe *acenned* =
filius ancillæ tue; 148. 9 : *aľæded* = o; 50. 74 : *geclænsod*
= mundabor.

NSF. (2) :—50. 127 (Cot.): hiorte *geclænsod* = *cor con-
*tritum*; 143. 10 : Ìe . . . singe on psalterio, ðe him *swynsað*
oft mid tyn strengum *getogen* hearpe = cantabo tibi; in
psalterio decem chordarum psallam tibi.
MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.

NSN. (1):—128. 4: afohten = evellatur.
NPM. (1):—67. 24: gegaderade = conjuncti.
NPF. (1):—50. 145 (Cot.): forgeofene = 0 (or pred.?).
ASF. (1):—107. 9: Hwylc gelædeð me on lifes byrig fæste getrymede = Quis deducet me in civitatem munitam.

II. With Object (11).

NSM. (2):—77. 65²: wine druncen = crapulatus a vino;
54. 24: bealuinwites fæcne gefylled = dolosi.
NSF. (1):—50. 128 (Cot.): hiorte . . . geadmeded ingesancum = cor . . . humiliatum.
NPF. (1):—50. 51 (Cot.): ie . . . bidde sæt me forgefene gastes wunde an forgescaft feran mote. [There is no Latin correspondence to this part of 50. 51, the verse being much amplified in the O. E. translation. Grein in Glossary sub v. forgifan says that forgefene is accusative absolute, and supplies ie as subject of mote. I translate as Dietrich (quoted by Grein): 'ut mihi condonata animi vulnera in abolitionem abire possint.]

NPN. (3):—106. 36: syðsan greowan lungre land heors alooden westmum = Et seminaverunt agros, et plantaverunt vineas, et feerunt fructum nativitatis; 148. 10: fugla cynn fiderum gescyrped = volucrese pennatae (may also be singular); 67. 17: wurun craet tyn Susendo geteled rime = currus Dei decem millibus multiplex.

DSN. (1):—67. 26: on ินum temple tidum gehalgod, sæt ys on Hierusalem = a templo sancto tuo quod est in H. (or NSM.?).
ASF. (2):—59. 8: weallum beworhte = munitam; 131. 5: stowe drihtne georene = locum Domino.
APN. (1):—106. 32: He on westenne wynne streamas soðfæst sette, sæt he sarig folc geðewde ðurste þa blissade = Quia posuit flumina in desertum, et exitus aquarum in sitim.
B.—MINOR POEMS.*

AZARIAS (2).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NPM. (1):—162: *lifigende.*

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NPM. (1):—161: lege *bilegde.*

CALENDAR OF SAINTS (4).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. Without Object (2).

NSM. (2):—7: forðy se kalend us cymed *gedincged* on *sam ycan dæge*; 164: *sætte Haligmonð heleðum gedinged* fereð to folce.

II. With Object (2).

NSM. (2):—142: wæstmum *hladen*; 205: forste *gefeterad* (may be acc.).

CHARMS (4).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—1. 74: Ful æcer fodres fira cinne *beorht-blowende*, ðu gebletsod weorð.

*The text of the *Ruin* is so defective that I have taken no account of this poem.*
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (3).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (2).

ASN. (1):—i. 61: heo si geborgen wið ealra bealwa gehwylc, ðara lyblaca geond land sawen.
APN. (1):—i. 64: ðæt awendan ne mæge word ðus geewedene.

II. WITH OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—viii. 30: Johannes wuldre gewlitegod.

CHRIST'S DESCENT INTO HELL, RESURRECTION, ASCENSION, AND APPEARANCE AT FINAL JUDGMENT (4).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

APM. (1):—81: gebeged.

II. WITH OBJECT (3).

NSM. (1):—172: dome gewurðad.
NSN. (2):—284: wynnum bewunden; 283: gimmum gefrætewod.

CREED (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

ASM. (1):—10: cyning, hider asendne.

DOOMSDAY (5).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (3).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (2).

NSM. (1):—25¹: munonigende cwæð.
NPM. (1):—231: deriende gedwinað.
II. With Object (1).

NPN. (1):—112: cumað hider ufon of heofone deað beancigende tacen = signa minantia mortem of Latin original.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. With Object (2).

NSM. (2):—290: blotsum behangen ; 25²: mode gedrefed.

DREAM OF THE ROOD (Vercelli Text) (3).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—24: Hwædre ic sær liegende lange hwile beheold hverowearig hælendes treow.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. Without Object (1).

DSN. (1):—49: Eall ic wæs mid blode bestemed, begoten of sæs guman sidan.

II. With Object (1).

ASN. (1):—5: leohete bewunden.

DURHAM (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NPN. (1):—19: Eardiað . . . in æm minstre unarimeda reliquia, monia wundrum gewurðad.
EADGAR (2).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. With Object (2).

NSM. (1):—28 B: hama bereafod.
NSN. (1):—11 A: agangen wæs tynhund wintra geteled rimes.

EADWEARD (2).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—9: wel gehungen.

II. With Object (1).

NSM. (1):—16: lande bereafod.

FALLEN ANGELS (DIE KLAGEN DER GEFALLENEN ENGEL) (12).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (12).

I. Without Object (3).

NSM. (1):—181: aworpen.
NPM. (1):—308: gefrætwod.
ASF. (1):—341: Godes andsacan hweorfan gæont helhe, hate onæled ufian and utan.

II. With Object (9).

NSM. (5):—186: goda bedælde; 122: duguðum bedeled; 121: wuldre benemed; 38: gebunden fyrelommum; 131: synnum forwundod.
NPM. (3):—344: dreamum bedælde; 52: susle begrorene; 343: wuldres bescyrede.
NPF. (1):—296: sorgum bedælde.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 259

FATES OF MEN (3).
A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).
   I. Without Object (1).

DSM. (1):—9: god ana wat, hwæt him veaxendum winter bringeð.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).
   I. With Object (2).

NSM. (2):—55: dreamum biscryed; 20: mode gebysgod.

GLORIA (2).
A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).
   I. Without Object (2).

NSM. (2):—10: asyndrod; 12: gebletsod.

GNOMIC VERSES (1).
A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).
   I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—II. 35: to ðæs oft cymeð deað unsinged.

HARROWING OF HELL (HÖLLENFAHRT CHRISTI) (2).
A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (2).
   I. Without Object (2).

NSM. (1):—24: hlyhhende spræc.
NPM. (1):—91: mændon murnende.
HUSBAND'S MESSAGE (2).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2):
   I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).
   NSF. (1):—13: sæt þu sinchroden sylf gemunde.

   II. WITH OBJECT (1).
   NSM. (1):—39: nyde gebæded (ms. is defective).

HYMN (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).
   I. WITH OBJECT (1).
   NSM. (1):—43: haliges gastes fegere geselld.

INSCRIPTION ON CROSS AT BRUSSELS (2).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).
   I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).
   NSF. (1):—21: bær byfigende.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).
   I. WITH OBJECT (1).
   NSF. (1):—22: blode bestemed.

JUDITH (9).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).
   I. WITH OBJECT (1).
   NPM. (1):—272: Hi ða somod ealle ongunnon cohetan, cirman hlude þ gristbitian gode orfeorme, mid toðon torn
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 261

Soligende. [Cf. Guthlac 1029: torn soliende; and Psalm 111: torn tosum solian = dentibus fremere.]

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (8).

I. With Object (8).

NSM. (2):—67: wine swa druncen; 118: ðystrum forðylmed.

NSF. (2):—171: golde gefrætewod; 129: ðeawum ge-

ASF. (2):—36: beagum gehlæste; 37: hringum gehrodene.

ASN. (1):—329: golde gefrætewod.

APF. (1):—339: gerenode golde.

Note.—A. Müller considers ðearffendre in 85 (io ðe . . .
biddan wylle milte ðinre me ðearffendre) and geweorðod in
299 (Him on laste for sweet Ebrea sigore geweorðod) appositive; they may be, but to me the former seems attributive
and the latter predicative.

MALDON (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NPM. (1):—57: ðæt ge mid urum sceattum to scype
ganon unbefohtene (or pred.?).

RUNESONG (2).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. With Object (2).

NS. F. or M. (1):—31: flor forste geworruht.

NSN. (1):—37: wyrtrumum underwreðyd.
SALOMO AND SATURNUS (6).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (3).

I. Without Object (3).

NSM. (1):—105: ёнne he hangiende helle wiscēs.
NPN. (1):—220: stercreynn, ... ña ñe nu weallende ñurh attres oroð ingang rymað.
ASF. (1):—447: lifigende.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (3).

I. Without Object (2).

NSF. (1):—31: gegoten.
NSN. (1):—222: gescæned.

II. With Object (1).

ASM. (1):—104: heolstre behelmed.

SEAFARER (4).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. Without an Object (1).

NSM. (1):—106: cymeð him se deað undìnged.

II. With an Object (3).

NSM. (3):—162: winemægum bidroren; 17: bihongen hrimgicelum; 161: wynnum biloren.

SOUL AND BODY (4).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—46 (Verc.): ic wæs gast on ñe fram gode sended (or pred.?).
II. With Object (3).

NSM. (2):—34 (Verc.): *fæsce befangen*; 67 (Verc.): *synnum gesargod.*
NSN. (1):—105 (Verc.): *daedum gedrefed.*

**SPIRIT OF MEN (4).**

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NPM. (1):—82: we sculon a *hyegende hælo rædes gemunan* in mode ðæla gehwylcum ðone selestan sigora waldend.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (3).

I. With Object (3).

NSM. (3):—42: *ðrymme gebyrmed*; 41: *wine gewæged*; 43: *æfestum onæled.*

**SUMMONS TO PRAYER.**

*Note.—No example occurs in the Anglo-Saxon part of this poem, but two occur in the Latin, both with an object:*—
2: *Dæne gemiltseð se ... ðrymcyninge thronum sedens*; 25: to *Seodne thronum regenti.* With both compare *Phænix* 623: *ðrymsittendum.*

**WALDERE (1).**

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NSF. (1):—B 19: Standeð me her on eaxelum Ælfheres laf god and geapneb, golde *gewearðod* (or pred.?).
WANDERER (1).
A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).
NSM. (1):—20: eðle bidæled.

WHALE (5).
A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).
NP. M. or N. (1):—32: bið... deofla wise, sæt hi droht-ende ðurh dyrne meaht duguðe beswicæ.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. Without Object (1).
NSM. (1):—70: gereaht (but the passage is doubtful).

II. With Object (3).
NSM. (1):—45: heoloðhelme biðseaht.
NSN. (1):—10: sondbeorgum ymbseald.
NPM. (1):—74: gyltum gehrodene.

WIDSID (2).
A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).
NSM. (1):—39: ac Offa geslog ærest monna cniht wesende cynerica mæst (cf. Beow. 46, 372, 535, 1187; Bede 142. 8, 188. 1).
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NSM. (1):—53: godes and yfles sær ic cunnade onosle bidæled.

WONDERS OF CREATION (3).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (3).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—80: witan . . . oððe hwa sæs leohes lond-buende brucan mote.

II. With Object (2).

NPM. (2):—14, 15: cuðon ryht sprecan, sæt a fricende firæ cynnes ſeegende searoruna gespon a gemynge mæst monna wiston.

Note.—Bewritten of line 19 should be bewritan or bewriðan, as several editors conjecture.
SYNOPSIS TABLE OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLES IN ANGLO-SAXON.

I.—IN THE PROSE WORKS.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Without Object.</td>
<td>With Object.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Total.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bede,†</td>
<td>107</td>
<td>93</td>
<td>78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boeth,†</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greg.†</td>
<td>58</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oros.†</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ps. Th.†</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chron.</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Laws</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benedict.†</td>
<td>63</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bl. Hom.</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ælf. Hom.</td>
<td>477</td>
<td>208</td>
<td>168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ælf. L. of S.</td>
<td>335</td>
<td>129</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ælf. de V. et N. Test.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ælf. Hept.</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A.-S. Hom. &amp; L. of S. L.</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A.-S. Hom. &amp; L. of S. H.</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mat.</td>
<td>67</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gospels, M.</td>
<td>71</td>
<td>39</td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Luke</td>
<td>91</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wulfst.</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benet.†</td>
<td>163</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Totals in the Prose Works...</td>
<td>1636</td>
<td>807</td>
<td>707</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.
### II.—IN THE POEMS.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Work</th>
<th>Present Participle</th>
<th>Preterite Participle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>N.</td>
<td>G.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beowulf</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Genesis</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Exodus</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Daniel</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cynewulf's Christ</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elena</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Juliana</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Guylac</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riddles</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andreas</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phoenix</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Metres of Boethius</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Minor Psalms</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Totals in Poetry</td>
<td>148</td>
<td>123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Totals in Prose</td>
<td>1636</td>
<td>807</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grand Totals</td>
<td>1784</td>
<td>932</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
CHAPTER II.

USES OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

The uses of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon may be grouped under the three following larger heads:—

I. The Appositive Participle is equivalent to a Dependent Adjectival (Relative) Clause, and denotes either an action or a state, as in:—Mk. 3. 1: sær wæs an man forscrunecne hand hæbbende = erat ibi homo habens manum aridam; Bede¹ 246. 7: sende . . . haligne wer þ in his þeawum gemetfæstne þ in leornunge . . . wel gelærdeþe = 194. 28: misið . . . uirum sanctum, . . . scripturarum lectione sufficienter instructum; Beow. 624: sæt hio Beowulfe, beagroden ewen, mode geðungæ medoful æþær; Aelf. L. S. 28. 58: On þam ylean dege com sum bisceop, helenus gehaten.

II. The Appositive Participle is equivalent to a Dependent Adverbial (Conjunctive) Clause, and denotes time, manner, means, etc., as in:—Bede 8. 23b: ða brynas . . . gebiddende adwæscæ = 37. 5: incendia orando restinxerit; ib. 10. 10: þæt se ylca bisceop geworden onbead = 48. 1: Ut idem episcopus factus mandarit; Beow. 480: Ful oft gebeotedon beore drunciæ ofer ealowæge oretnægas.

III. The Appositive Participle is substantially equivalent to an Independent Clause, and either (1) denotes an accompanying circumstance or (2) repeats the idea of the principal verb. Doubtless, as Gildersleeve holds (Latin Grammar, § 664, Remark 1), an ultimate analysis would show every participle to be dependent in nature; but the dependence here is so slight that it may be ignored. Certainly the function of the participles under this head is so radically
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 269

different from that of those under I. and II. as to demand separate consideration. Nor does the fact that in modern English we not infrequently retain the participle in our translation of (2) (cf. Mat. 13. 3) invalidate this classification. To define the class negatively: all appositive participles that are not equal to either a dependent adjectival or a dependent adverbial clause are considered as equal to an independent clause. This use of the participle is commonly recognized by Greek and Latin grammarians. Thus, in the remark just cited, Gildersleeve admits this use of the participle, although he objects to its being classed as co-ordinate: "It is sometimes convenient to translate a Participle Sentence by a co-ordinate clause, but the Participle itself is never co-ordinate, and such clauses are never equivalents." Goodwin also recognizes this use; in § 832–§ 844 of his Moods and Tenses he designates the relations expressed by his "Circumstantial Participle" as follows: (1) time, (2) means, (3) manner, (4) cause, (5) purpose, (6) condition, (7) concession, (8) "any attendant circumstance, the participle being merely descriptive;" (9) "that in which the action consists." His (8) and (9) cover exactly the ground of my "participle substantially equivalent to an independent clause;" and it seems to me that to give this use the name Co-ordinate is in the interest of simplicity. This modification made, Goodwin's "Circumstantial Participle" would tally perfectly with my "Participle equivalent to a dependent adverbial clause." Fay (l. c.) and Milroy (p. 16) explicitly state that the participle is occasionally equivalent to a co-ordinated finite verb. If I dwell on this co-ordinate use of the participle, it is because it has received but scant treatment in our standard English and German grammars (see March, § 459 (4), Mätzner, III, p. 70 (c), and von Jagemann, § 124, c), and is not mentioned in any of the dissertations on Anglo-Saxon or Germanic syntax that have come under my notice. Examples are as follows:—(1):—Lk. 4. 39: he standende ofer hig ðam ðefore ðebead = stans super illam imperavit febri; ib. 10. 23: þa cwæþ he to his
learningenhtum *bexend* = Et *conversus ad discipulos suos dixit*;—*Aelf. L. S. 146. 458*: behyddon his . . . lichaman . . .

*secgende*; *Mat. 8. 25*: hy awehton hyne *sus cueænde* = suscitaverunt eum *dicentes*;—(2):—*Mat. 11. 25*: Se hælynd *cwæp andswariende* = *respondens Jesus dixit*; *ib. 13. 3*: he spræc to hym fela on bigspellum, *cueænde* = Et locutus est eis multa in parabolis, *dicens*; *Aelf. L. S. 80. 523*: spræc mid . . . reorde god *herigende*.

The relative frequency of these three uses of the appositive participle—the adjectival, the adverbial, and the co-ordinate—may be gathered from these figures: of the adjectival there are about 1223 instances in all, 881 in the prose and 342 in the poetry; of the adverbial, about 897 instances, 691 in the prose and 206 in the poetry; of the co-ordinate, about 890 instances, 871 in the prose and 19 in the poetry. In all about 3010 examples of the appositive participle have been collected, of which 1784 are present and 1226 are preterite.

So much by way of general statement; let us now consider the three classes in detail.

I. THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IS EQUIVALENT TO A DEPENDENT ADJECTIVAL (RELATIVE) CLAUSE.

As we have seen, the adjectival is the commonest use of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon, about 1223 examples occurring in all. Of this number 881 occur in the prose, and 342 in the poetry, in each distributed throughout all periods.

The adjectival use is found with both the present and the preterite participles, but is far more frequent with the latter than with the former. About 377 examples occur of the present participle, and about 846 of the preterite. Examples of each participle are given below.

The present participle, in this use, has the power of governing a direct object, but it occurs far more frequently
without an object than with one, especially in Early West Saxon and in the poetry, in the latter of which an object is almost unknown. In all we have 270 present participles without an object and 107 with an object. [See the discussion of the Governing Power of the Participle, in Chapter III.]

The past participle, too, can have an object (see Explanatory Note to Statistics), and in the poetry usually does; in prose the reverse is the case. Of the preterite participles used adjectivally, 609 have no object, of which 525 are found in the prose and 84 in the poetry; while 237 do have an object, of which 39 are from the prose and 198 from the poetry.

As stated in my Introduction, not a few scholars deny the adjectival use to the appositive participle, and class all participles that are equivalent to a relative clause as attributive. I have, however, already explained why I do not accept this view, and have shown that the meaning of the term appositive participle has been extended to include participles equal to relative clauses. Still other scholars admit that the participle equivalent to a relative clause may be used appositively, but only, they maintain, when the participle denotes an act (in the largest sense); that which denotes a state or condition being called attributive. It appears to me that, in so doing, these grammarians are confounding two distinct things, viz., the classification of the participle by its nature and the classification by its syntactical relationship,—a confusion that should be avoided. But I have not ignored the object at which these scholars aim, namely, sharply to discriminate between the participle that has strong verbal (assertive) power and the participle that has strong adjectival (descriptive) power; on the contrary, by arranging the whole of my statistics with reference to whether or not the participle is followed by an object, and by emphasizing the co-ordinate use of the participle, I have tried to segregate the more verbal from the less verbal participles to a degree not
attempted hitherto in Anglo-Saxon. To apply this principle to the matter in hand, the participle that is equivalent to an adjectival (relative) clause: the transitive participle with an object is manifestly nearer a verb than the participle without an object. Again, the preterite participle is more like an adjective than is the corresponding present participle. This will sufficiently explain the chief differences between my statistics and those of former investigators as to the adjectival use of the appositive participle.

The adjectival use occurs in most of the texts, prose and poetical, and I give a few examples here from the chief writers in prose and in poetry.

I. In Prose.

Ælfréd. — Bede¹ 8. 2: ːæt P . . . wæs siended to gelyfendum Scotton on Crist = 28. 15: Ut . . . P. ad Scottos in Christum credentes missus est.—Ib. 78. 15: ːæt wiif in blodes flownesse geseted . . . meahthe gehrian = 55. 25: Si ergo in fluxu . . . posita . . . potuit tangere.—Boeth. 46. 27: Hwæt is heora nu to lafe, butan se lytla hlisa ȳ se nama mid feaum stafum awritten ? = 47. 17: Signat superstes fama tenuis pauculis Inane nomen litteris.—Greg.¹ 155. 10: ːonne he ongiet be sumum ːingum oððe ːeawum utanne ætewdum eall ːæt hie innan ːencea ː = 112*: qui discussis quibusdam signis exterius apparentibus ita corda . . . penetrat etc.

Ps. Th. :—20. 3: ðu sendest his heafod kynegold, mid deorwyrðum gimmum astæned = posuisti in capite ejus coronam de lapide pretioso.

Chron. :—755 F.: Sibertes broðer, Cynehärd gehaten, ofслоh Cynewulf on Merantune.

Laws :—Ælfréd, c. 9, Title: Be bearneænum wife ofslæge-num [MS. B.: Be ðam ðæt man ofслаæ wif mid cilde].

Bened.¹ :—25. 16: and nu fram ðam englum us béæhtum ure weorc . . . beðæ gebodude = 50. 13: et ab angelis nobis deputatis . . . opera nostra nuntiantur.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 273

Bl. Hom. 11. 7: ArweorSian we Crist on binne asetene.

Ælfric:—L. S. 54. 83: gewendon to . . . byrig, Antiochia geceged (sic!):—Ib. 78. 4941: Effren was gehaten sum swiðe halig abbod on væstene wunigende, fela wundra wyrcende.

Gosp.:—Mat. 8. 9: SqSlicce ic eom man under anwealde gesett = Nam et ego homo sum sub potestate constitutus.—Ib. 8. 17: ðæt ware gefylled ðæt geceweden is ðurh esaiam ðone witegan, ðus eweðende (sic!).—Ib. 11. 16: heo ys gelic sittendum onapun on foretige = Similis est pueris sedentibus in foro.

Wulfst.:—46. 7: wa eow, . . . he leegað togsedere hamas and æhtæ on unriht begytene on æghwilce healfe.—181. 29: ealle gæmænelice, gehadode and læwede, bugon to gode georne.

II. In Poetry.

Beow.:—777: ðær fram sylle abeag medubenc monig mine gefræge, golde geregnad.—Ib. 1645: Þa com in gan ealdor ðegna, ðædeene mon dome gewurðad.

El.:—331: ðær on ðrýmme bad . . . geatolic guðcwen golde gehyrsted (or pred.?).—Ib. 352: Swa hit eft be eow Essais witga for weorodum wordum mælde, deophycoygende ðurh dryhtnes gast.

Gen.:—725: hloh ða þ plegode boda bitre gehugod.—Ib. 1836: hwæt siæ freondlufu ellðæodigra uncer twega, feorren cumenra.

II. THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IS EQUIVALENT TO A DEPENDENT ADVERBIAL (CONJUNCTIVE) CLAUSE.

Of the adverbial use of the appositive participle I have found about 897 examples, 691 in the prose and 206 in the poetry.

The present participle occurs 538 times in this use, and the past participle 359 times.
Of the present participles 430 have no object and 108 have; of the preterite participles 261 have no object, while 98 have.

In its adverbial use the appositive participle denotes subordinate relations of manner and means (combined here under the head of Modal), of time, of cause, of purpose, of concession, and of condition. Of course, these uses so interlap that at times the same participle can with propriety be put under several different heads. Where classification is so largely a matter of subjectivity, there must be much room for difference of opinion. I trust, however, that in the main my classification will justify itself to my readers. According to my estimate, the approximate number of each use is: Modal, 319; Temporal, 248; Causal, 228; Final, 40; Concessive, 33; Conditional, 29.

Let us look at each for a moment by itself.

I. MODAL.

The Modal use of the appositive participle is far more frequent in Anglo-Saxon prose than in the poetry, 257 examples occurring in the former and 62 in the latter.

Of these 319 examples 254 are present and 65 are past. An object is rarely used with the modal participle, only 16 occurring with the present participle and 22 with the preterite.

Though occurring in all periods of Anglo-Saxon, the modal participle is much more common in the works of Alfred than in those of any other author. In his Bede and his Gregory the construction is especially frequent, about one-third of all the examples being found in these two works. Here, as my statistics show, the Anglo-Saxon participle often translates a Latin gerund in the ablative; and the frequency of the gerund in the two originals has doubtless caused the large number of modal participles in the two translations.

As stated above, the modal participle denotes both manner and means. It is not always easy to tell which notion
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 275

predominates, but the examples below will, it is hoped, sufficiently illustrate the two tendencies.

Some participles denoting manner, instead of being equivalent to a dependent adverbial clause, are practically equivalent to a simple adverb, as in: Bede¹ 86. 22ᵃᵇ: sæt he waxcende ȝohte sæt he [no] veotende arænde = 60. 28: quia, quod cogitaniu sciens, hoc pertulit nesciens; ib. 38. 1: Pa ... he ealle ȝa witu ... geðyldelice ȝ gæfeonde abær = 20. 1: Qui ... patienter hæc pro Domino, immo gaudenter ferebat; ib. 310. 30: Pas we seendon arfañstlice fylgende ȝ rihtwuldriende = 239. 23: Hos itaque sequentes nos pie atque orthodoxe; Ælf. Hom. 1. 52ᵃ: he for ðæm stænendum wælwildende gebæd; Mat. 5. 11: seegeæð ælc yfel ongen eow leogende for me = dixerint omne malum adversum vos mentientes propter me; etc., etc. Personally I believe it would be better to class such words as participial adverbs rather than adverbial participles; but, as I hesitate to set up new categories, in my statistics I have retained them under the ordinary rubric, save in one or two cases that could not be construed as participles, like ðærogende (Greg.¹ 159. 18, etc.: see Statistics). This use of the participle as an adverb, it is well known, is common in Greek (see Goodwin, Greek Grammar, § 1564) and in Latin (see Gildersleeve, Latin Grammar, § 325. 6). In Old High German it was so very frequent that there was developed a regular adverbial form of the participle in -o (O. Erdmann, Syntax der Sprache Otfrids, § 359; see below, Chapter v.). I have not, however, found this use of the participle treated in Koch, Mätzner, March, or in the dissertations on Old English syntax. There is perhaps a suggestion of it in Cosijn (Π., p. 97), who writes of Greg.¹ 159. 18: "adverbialisch ðærogende?" Further illustrations are given under "(2) Manner" below.

(1) Means.

I. In Prose.

Ælfred.—Bede¹ 22. 9: ðæt se b. æne dumbne monn gebiddende geleade = 282. 30: Ut episcopus mutum benedi-
cendo curaurerit. So gebiddende = orando in Bede 1 22. 11, 22. 14, etc.—Ib. 72. 3a & b: sætte oft [seo cirice] sæt wiðer-worde yfel aborende ðældend bewered = 51. 29: ut sæpe malum quod adversatur portando et dissimulando conpescat.—Greg. 1 53. 16: Sua si nicla cræftiga hiertende toseyfel & egesi-ende stierð ofermetta mid sære tælinge his hieremonnum, sæt he hie gebringe on life = 30a: Magnus enim regendi artificex favoribus impellit, terroribus retrahit: ut etc.—Ib. 81. 10, 11: sæt is sæt he sprecende bebiet sæt he sæt wyrende ðowieve, sæt hit ðurh ðone fultum sie forðgenge = 54a: quia quod loquendo imperat, ostendendo adjuvat ut stat.—Ib. 127. 6, 7: sæt mod his hieremonna oliccende egesige & ðreatigende olice = 88b: terrendo demulceat, et tamen ad terroris reverentiam demulcendo constringat.—Ib. 225. 22: ða monnðæwnesse ðe he ðurhtogen hæfde eft ðæahigonde on yfel gewend [Cotton ms.: gewent] = 170b: et mansuetudinem, quam tolerantes habuerunt, retractantes in malitiam vertunt.

Bened. 1:—2. 10: nellen ge elcende eowere heortan ahyrdan = 4. 15: nolite obdurare corda vestra.

Bl. Hom.:—89. 34a & b: raðe he lifgende ut eode of his byr-genne mid his ageure mihte aweht.

Ælfric:—Hom. 1. 226b: Mare miht wæs, sæt he ðone deað mid his æriste tobæc, ðonne he his lif gehoeldæ, of sære rode ðistigende.—Ib., ii. 182a 2: ðone ðe B. na handlunge ac on-beseonde fram his bendum alysde.

Gosp.:—Lk. 12. 25: Hwylc eower mæg ðencende iccan ane elne to his anlicenesse? = Quis autem vestrum cogitando potest adjicere ad staturam suam cubitum unum?—Mk. 15. 30: gehæl ðe sylfne of sære rode ðistigende = Salvum fac temetipsum descendens de cruce.

II. In Poetry.

El.:—449: Ne mæg æfre ofer sæt Ebrea ðeod raed ðeahigende rice healdan. [May be adjectival, as Schürmann and Garnett hold.]
(2) **Manner.**

I. In Prose.

**Ælfræd:**—*Bede* 72. 9: ða ðe him ne ondræðað wrotonde syngian = 52. 1: qui non metuunt sciento peccare.—*Ip. 102. 21*: is sægd ðæt he beotigende foræwæde = 83. 27: fertur minitials prædixisse.—*Boeth.* 3. 7: Hu B. hine singende gehæl, þ his earfðu to Gode lænde.—*Ip. 9. 29*: Ongan ða giddien, þ ðus singende cwæð.—*Ip. 8. 15*: ða ic ða ðis leoð, cwæð B., geomricende asungen hælde, ða com etc. = 4. 2: Hæc dum mecum tacitus ipse reputarem querimoni- amque lacrimabilem stilli officio signarem, adstitisse . . . uisa est mulier etc.—*Greg.* 185. 9: æreð mon secal sprecan asciende, suelce he be oðrum menn sprece & ascie = 138*: prius per quasdam similitudines velut de alieno negotio requirendi sunt.—*Ip. 405. 31*: hi ofermodgiende his gebod forhogdon = superbiens ejus jussa contemptis.—*Ip. 379. 23*: Hie sceoldon gehieran hu Essaias se witga hreowsigende hine selfne telde = 294*: Audiant quod Isaias magna voce peni- tentiae se ipse reprehendit.—*Ip. 381. 25*: cwæð ðæt ða sceolden bion synderlice Godes ðegnas, ða ðe umwandende ðara sceyldegena gyhtas ofslogen = 296*: illos a parte Dei de- nuntiavit existere, qui delinquentium seclera incenctanter ferirent dicens (or adverb?) —*Ip. 117. 23*: Forðam we beóð mid Gode sua micle suiðor gebundne sua we for monnum orsorglicor ungewitnode syngiað = 82*: Tanto ergo apud Domi- num obligatores sumus, quanto apud homines inulè peccamus.

**Ælfric:**—*Hom. 1. 54*: ðæt ðu seca ðillsigende forgisian.—*Ip. 1. 340*¹: he hit bær on his exlum to ðære eowde blissigende.

**Gosp.**—*Mat. 6. 5*: ða luðiað ðæt hig gebiddon hi standende on gesomnungum = qui amant in synagogis . . . stantes orare.—*Mk. 5. 40*: inn-eodon suwiende ðar ðæt mæden wæs = ingreditur ubi puella erat jacens.—*Ip. 9. 24*: wendon cwæð = cum lacrymis aiebát.—*Lk. 22. 65*: manega ðøre ðing hig him to cwædon dysigende = alia multa blasphemantes dicebant in eum.
II. In Poetry.

Beow. 2062: him se öðer ðunan ðosað wigende, con him land geare. [If we adopt Heyne's lifigende, the participle is Final instead of Modal. See below under Final].—Ib. 2235: swa hy on geardagum gumena nathwylc eormenlafe æðelan cynnes sanchyegende ðær gehydde.—Ib. 2595: niwan steñe nearo ðrowde fyre befongen, se ðe ær folce weold. [May be Adjectival, but is more probably Modal, as K. Köhler puts it.]

Andr. 1557: hean, hygegeomor, heofende spræc. [May be Adjectival.]

Gen. 1582: ac he hlihende broðrum sægde.

II. TEMPORAL.

The second most frequent use of the adverbial appositive participle is to denote relations of time. If we use the term temporal in a very broad sense, no doubt a number of participles that I have put under other rubrics might be put here, since almost any participle may be looked upon as indicating after a fashion a time relationship. But I have classed as temporal only those participles in which the idea of time seems definite rather than general. Of the 248 temporal participles in Anglo-Saxon, 200 are found in the prose, and 48 in the poetry.

Of these participles 166 are in the present tense, and 82 in the preterite.

As with the modal participle, so here an object is rare; 28 occurring with the present participle and 10 with the preterite.

As my table shows, the temporal participle is sprinkled throughout the periods of Anglo-Saxon.

Examples follow:

I. In Prose.

Ælfred.—Bede¹ 214. 11: swa eft onlysed ðy lichamon byrneð = 166. 4: ita solutus corpore ardebit.—Ib. 264. 25:
song "a ingongende ealle gefylde = 208. 25: quod ingressa [= uox] totum impleuit.—Ib. 142. 8: sægde he sæt he hine [i. e., here, sanctuary] cneohit weosende gesawe (MS. Ca: hine cuðe cniht wesende) = 116. 12: se in puritia uiddisse testabatur.—Greg. 193. 9: Hit is gecueden sæt se sacerd scolde sweltan, gif se sweg nære of him gehiered ægðer ge inngongendum ge utgongendum, etc. = 62b: Sacerdos namque ingrediens vel egrediens moritur, si de eo sonitus non audi tur.—Ib. 399. 14: Sio Segor gehælde Loth fleondne = 318*: Segor civitas, quæ fugientem salvet infirmum.

Ælfric.—Hom. i. 232a: Crist ableow ðone Halgan Gast ofer ða apostolas, ða-gyt vunigende on eorðan.—Ib. ii. 250b: Se H. ða stod on ðam domerne gelædd.

Gosp.—Mat. 7. 6: hig ðonne ongean gewende eow toslyton = conversi dirumpant vos.—Mk. 15. 15: sealde him ðone hælend beswungenne = tradidit Jesum flagellis cæsum (or Adjectival?).

II. In Poetry.

Beow.:—535: Wit sæt gecweædon cniḥt-wesende.—Ib. 815: wæs gehwæðer ðrum lifigende lað.

El.:—529: Ðus mee fæder min on fyrdagum unweaxenne wordum læerde.

Gen.:—2169: ac ic ðe lifigende her wið weana gehwam wreo ð scylde.

III. CAUSAL.

Of the 228 Causal Participles, 157 belong to the prose and 71 to the poetry.

The present participle is found 56 times, the preterite 172 times.

An object occurs with the present participle in 23 instances, and with the preterite in 51 instances.

The causal use is pretty evenly distributed throughout the various prose and poetical texts.

Not a few of the examples are doubtful.
I. In Prose.

Ælfric:—Bede 8. 5: Hæt Bryttas mid ðy mœrran hungre genedde  ða elreordian of heora gemenrum adrifan = 29. 12: Ut Brettones fame famosa coacti barbaros suis e finibus pepulrint.—Ib. 62. 13: he ða geæonde wæs gefylwod = 47. 22: credens baptizatus est.—Ib. 186. 31: ac heo swa ondæwende from him gewat = 151. 10: quin in tantum timens aufugit.

Ælfric:—Hom. i. 380b: he feallende toberst on fewer sticca.—Ib. i. 594b: Egeas geæbylingd het hine ahon.

Gos.:—Mk. 3. 5b: ofer hyra heorton blindnesse geænret cwæð = contristatus super caæcitate . . . dicit.—Mat. 14. 8: Ða cwæð heo fram hyre meder gemyngod = At illa præmonita a matre sua . . . inquit (or Temporal?).—Ib. 15. 31: swa ðæt ða mænegu wundredon geseonde dumbe sprecende etc. = Íta ut türbæ mirarentur videntes mutos loquentes.—Lk. 4. 28: Ða wurdon hig ealle on ðære gesanumunge mid yrre gefyllod, ðas ðing geæyrrende = Et repleti sunt omnes in synagoga ira, hæc audientes.

II. In Poetry.

Andr. 436: wæteregesa sceal geæyd || geætreod ðurh ðryð-cining, lagu lacende líðra wyrðan.—Ib. 746: oððe sel nyton mode gemyrde.

El. 1128: he ðan nægloan onsfeng egesan geæclod ððære arwyrðan cwene brohte.

Gen. 1571: Swiðe on slaþe seða nearwode, ðæt he ne mihte on gemynd drepen hine handum self mid hrægle wryon ð sceome ðeccan.

IV. FINAL.

The appositive participle denoting purpose is rare, only 40 examples having been found; 39 in the prose, and 1 in the poetry (doubtful).

This use is confined almost exclusively to the present participle; but one example occurs in the preterite (Ælfr. Hom. i. 134b), and that is doubtful.
The final participle has an object oftener than not; of the
39 present participles 35 have an object. The single example
of the preterite participle has no object.
A glance at the table will show that only three examples
have been found in Early West Saxon: two in Bede, each
answering to a Latin participle; and one in Gregory, cor-
responding to a Latin infinitive of purpose. Most of the
examples occur in Ælfric’s Homilies and in the Gospels.
Among the examples may be cited:—

I. In Prose.

Ælfric:—Bede\(^1\) 10. 7: bodode; \(\) swa mid his lef-
nyssé Godes word bodigende on Cent eode = 44. 25: sic
Cantiam prædicaturus intrauerit (or Pred.?).—Ib. 276. 12:
licode us efencuman æfter ðæawe arwyrdra rehta smeagende
be ðam etc. = 215. 1: placuit conuenire nos, tractaturos de
etc.—Greg.\(^1\) 61. 3: Se læce . . . ðæ gæð æfter ðæra monna
husum læwignende = 36*: percussum mederi properat.
Bened.\(^1\) 135. 27: sume heora fnada and wædas gemicelliað,
idel lôf fram mannum begytende = 232. 2: alii simbrias et
phylacteria sua magnificant, gloriam captantes ab hominibus.
—Ib. 134. 13: Oðer cyn is muneca, ðæ feor fram mannum
gewitað ond westestowa and ælætu and anvunung gelufliað,
gefænæcende Elian = 231. 6: Secundum genus est eremi-
tarum qui, procur ab hominibus recedentes, desperta loca et
vastas solidudines sequi, atque habitare perhibenter, ad imita-
tionem scilicet Eliaë.

Ælfric:—Hom. 1. 74*: Hi ða begun ðone apostol gesohton,
his miltsunge biddende.—Ib. 1. 134b: gebrohte ðæt cild ðæ
heo acende, H. C., gelæcod to ðam Godes temple (or adject-
tival?).—Ib. 1. 338b: “ðonne forlæt he ða nigon and hund-
nigontig on westene and gæð secende ðæt an ðæ him losode”
[or Pred.? Cf. Mat. 18. 12; gæð and secð = vadit quærere].
Gosp.:—Mat. 19. 3: ða genealæhten him to farisæi hyne
costnigende ð cwæl-ón = Et accesserunt ad cumb Pharisæi ten-
tantes eum, et dicentes.—Lk. 2. 45: hig gewendon to hierusalem hynesecende = regressi sunt in Jerusalem requirentes eum.—J. 6. 6: ðæt he cwæð his fundigende = Hoc autem dicebat tentans eum. So J. 8. 6: fundiende.

II. In Poetry.

Beow. 2062: if we read lisigende; but we have the modal use if we read wigende (see above, under Modal).

Dan. 355: weard æ se hata lig todrifæn ð todwæscæd, ðær ða deðhwæton geond ðone ofen eodon ð se engel mid, feorh nerigende, se ðær feorða wæs, Annanias ð Azarias ð Miscæl (or pred.?).

V. CONCESSIVE.

The concessive use of the appositive participle is somewhat rarer even than the final. 33 examples occur in all, 25 in the prose, and 8 in the poetry.

Of these 19 are in the present, and 14 in the past tense.

An object is very rare, only 4 occurring with each of the two participles.

As to its distribution, but three examples have been found in Early West Saxon, namely, one each in Bede, Gregory, and Orosius, the two first corresponding to Latin participles, and all being doubtful. Most of the instances are in the Gospels. One example occurs in each of these poems: Beowulf, Elene, Genesis, Guthlac, Juliana, and Metres of Boethius, and two in the Phoenix.

The following will serve as examples:—

I. In Prose.

Ælfræd.—Bede¹ 278. 18b: Gif he æne siþa onfangen, haten ham hweorfan, ne wille, etc. = 216. 16b: Quod si semel susceptus noluerit invitus redire, etc. [May be temporal, as Miller translates.]—Greg. 153. 1: Ac monige scylda open-
lice witene beoc to forberanne = 110*: Nonnulla autem vel apertem cognita, mature toleranda sunt, etc. [May be adjectival.] — Oros. 250. 14: Æfter væm Germanie gesohten Agustus ungeniedde him to friðe. [May be modal.]

Ælfric: — Hom. 1. 596 b 8: forðan ðe he ne geswicð sóð to bodigenne, nu twegen dagas ecu ðangigende.

Gosp.: — Mat. 13. 13a b: forðam ic spece to him mid bigspellum, forðam ðe lociende hig ne geseoð þ guarðende hig ne gehyrad = quia videntes non videat, et audientes non audiant. So: Mk. 4. 12a b; Lk. 8. 10a b.— Lk. 5. 5b: Eala beboend ealle niht swurcende we naht ne gefengon = Præceptor, per totem noctem laborantes, nihil cepimus.— Ib. 6. 35: læne syllæ nan ðing ðanum est gehihtende = date, nihil inde sperantes.

II. In Poetry.

Beow. 2350: for ðon he ær fela nearo neðende niða gedigde. [K. Köhler classes as modal, but Garnett translates as concessive.]

Gen. 2649: Me sægde ær ðat wif hire wordum selfa unfrigendum, ðat etc.

Guth. 1260: Bad se ðe secolde eadig on elne endedogor awrecen wælstrælum. [Furkert: Pred. after intransitive verb, but Gollancz translates as appositive and concessive.]

Jut. 241: Symle heo wuldrocyning herede æt heortan heofonrices god in ðam nydelafan, nergend fira, heolstre bihelmad.

Phoenix: 162: Donne wæðum strong west gewiteð wintrum gebyrgad fleogan feðrum snel — Ib. 368: Forðon he drusende deð ne bisorgað.

Metres of Boeth. 11. 34: Swa hæfð geheæðæræd heofonrices weard mid his anweald ealle gesceafte, ðat hiora æghwile wið ðær wið, þ þeah wìnnende wreðiað træste = 48. 3: Quod pugnantia semina foedus perpetuum tenent.
VI. CONDITIONAL.

Least frequent of all the adverbial uses of the appositive participle is the conditional. Of the 29 examples 13 are in the prose and 16 in the poetry.

The present participle is used 4 times, the preterite 25.

Twice the present participle has an object, and 11 times the preterite participle.

In Early West Saxon, I have found only 4 examples (1 in Bede and 3 in Boethius). Late West Saxon, also, has very few examples, there being one doubtful example in Ælfric and two in the Gospels. In the poetry are represented Beowulf (2), Genesis (3), Exodus (2), Eadgar (1), Andreas (3), Elene (2), Riddles (2), and Metrical Psalms (1).

As my quotations show, several of these examples are quite doubtful. Typical examples are:

I. In Prose.

Ælfric:—Bede 1 278. 18*: Gif he ðæne siða onfongen haten ham hweorfan [ne wille] = 216. 16*: Quod si semel susceptus noluerit initiatus redire etc.—Boeth. 1 30. 25, 26: Ac gif hi yfelæ sint þytyge ðonne sint hi þe plioliceran þ geswinefulran næfl ðonne næfli; forðæm yfelæ þegnas bioð simle heora hlafordes fiend = 37. 47 f.: Qui si uitiocius moribus sint, perruciosa domus sarsina et ipsis domino uelhementer inimica.—Ib. 91. 8: Ne mæg ic nane cwuce wuht ongitan þara þe wite hwæt hit wille, odhe hwæt hit nylle, þe ungenled lyste forweordan = 78. 45: nihil inuenio, quod nullis extra cogentibus abiciant manendi intentionem et ad interitum sponte festinent.

Bened. 1 28. 2: geneadod to anre mile gange, gang willes twa = 54. 7: angariati milliario vadunt duo.—Ib. 28. 6.

Gosp.:—Mk. 7. 15: Nis nan ðing of ðam men gangende ðæt hine besmitan mæge = Nihil est extra hominem introiens in eum quod possit eum coinquinore. [May be adjectival or
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 285
temporal.]—Ib. 7. 18: Ne ongyte ge sæt eall sæt utan cymð on ðone man gangende ne meağ hine besmitan? = Non intelli-
gitis quia omne extrinsecus introiens etc. [May be temporal.]

II. In Poetry.

Be.w. 1368, 1370: ðeah ðe hæðstapa hundum geswenced, heorot hornum trum holtwudu sece, feorran geflymed, ær he feorh seleð.

Gen. 1263: Siððan hundtwelftig geteled rime wintra on worulde wæsæce bisgæden sæge sæoda. So geteled rime(s): Gen. 1336, 2344; Exod. 372; Andr. 1035; Eadgar 11; El. 2 and 634; Metr. Ps. 67. 17.

Exod. 232: Wæs on anra gehwam æðelan cynnes alesen under lindum leoda duguðe on folcgetæl fïftig cista; hæfde cista gehwilc cuðes werodes garberendra, guðfremmendra x·hund geteled tireadigra.

Andr. 883: Swylce we gesegon for suna meotudes æðelum ecne eowic standan, twelfe geteadre, tireadige hæleð.

Riddles 24. 15, 16: Nelle ic unbunden ænigum hyran nymðe searoseled. Saga, hwæt ic hatte! [24. 15 may be temporal.]

III. THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IS SUBSTANTIALLY EQUIVALENT TO AN INDEPENDENT CLAUSE.

Of the 890 co-ordinate participles 871 are found in the prose, and 19 in the poetry.

The present participle occurs 869 times, and the preterite 21 times.

An object is found far more frequently with the co-ordi-
nate than with the adjectival or the adverbial participle, there being 633 instances with the present, and 2 with the past participle.

The co-ordinate participle is very rare in Early West Saxon and in the poetry; and whenever it occurs in the works of 10
Ælfred, it is in translation of a Latin appositive participle. It is very common in Benedict, in the works of Ælfric, in the Gospels, and in Benet.

I add a few examples to those already given in defining the co-ordinate use of the appositive participle. They are arranged under two heads: (1) the participle denotes an accompanying circumstance; (2) the participle repeats the idea of the principal verb. The former may conveniently be designated as the "circumstantial" participle in the narrower sense; the latter, as the "iterating" participle.

(1) The "Circumstantial" Participle.

I. In Prose.

Ælfred:—Bede 312. 23<sup>a</sup> & 24: we wuldriað usserne Drihten swa swa ðas wuldredon, noht toætecende oððe onweg atonde = 240. 18<sup>a</sup> & 25: glorificamus Dominum sicut ..., nihil addentes uel substrahentes.—Ib. 312. 25, 27: ða ðe heo onfengon we eac swelce onsoð, wuldriende God Fæder ð his Sunu = 240. 20, 21, 22: ... suscipimus, glorificantes Deum et filium eius.—Ib. 332. 16: Forðon ðe in ðæm ðealan mynste. ... Hereðwið ... regollicum ðeodscipum underþeoded, in ða þid baad ðone ecan sige = 253. 10: Nam H., ..., regularibus subdita disciplinis; expectabat (doubtful).—Other examples:—Bede 10. 12: biddende = petens; 14. 4: biddende = postulans; 310. 1: feoholende = compugnantes; 438. 30: sittende = residens.

—Oros. 1 12. 32, 33: ðonne forð ðonan west irnende heo tolið on twa ynb an igland ðe mon hæt Meroen, ð ðonan bugende ut on ðone Wendelsæ ... ðæt ðo ea bið ðowende oser eal Ægypta lond = 13. 20, 22: Ægyptus inferior ... habet ... fluviumque Nilum, qui etc. ... deinde diu ad occasum profluentes, faciensque insulam nomine Meroen in media sui: novissime ad septentrionem inflexus plana Ægypti rigat.

Chron. 656 E (p. 33<sup><sup>a</sup></sup>): ðeo papa seonde ða his writ ðus cwæðend (or adjectival ?). So 675 E (p. 35<sup>b</sup>).
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 287

Bened. 30. 3: swigean healdende ne spreoe oð ðæt he geah-sod sy = 56. 19: taciturnitatem habens usque ad interrogationem non loquatur.

Ælfrec:—Hom. 1. 48*: And gebigde his cneowu, mid micelre stemne cytipende etc.—Ib. 1. 62*: Iohannes beseah to heofonum, ðus cweðende.


Benet 31. 16: mid ealre gehyrsumnessa hine sylfne ðæowde ealdre geeftæcende drihtnes = omni obedientia se subdat majori, immittans dominum.

II. In Poetry.

Beow. 916: Hwilum flitende fealwe stræte meareum mæton.

Christ 950: Ond on seofon healfa swogað windas, blawað brecende bearhtmæ stæte.—Ib. 1016: Forðon nis ænig wunder hu him woruldmonna seo unclæne gecynd ceærom sorgende heæro ondredæ ðonne etc. (or adjectival?)


Met. Ps. 50. 1. 56 (Cot.): Ac ðu synfylle simle lærdes, ðæt hio ceerrande Criste herdon Þ hiom lif mid ðe langsum begeton.

(2) The "Iterating" Participle.

I. In Prose.

Ælfred:—Bede 330. 30: heo of eorcæn alæded leorde ðy fiftæðan daegæ etc. = 252. 20: de terris ablata transuiuit.—Ib. 240. 26: wool ... feor Þ wide grimsigende micle menigeo monna afylde Þ fornöm = 192. 4: longe lateque desouui-ens ... strauiit.—Ib. 312. 2: æfter heora lare ... geðwærelice
we gelyfað ondettende 239. 24: iuxta doctrinam eorum professi credimus consonanter, et confitemur.—Oros.¹ 240. 9: wepende mænde ða unare.

Chron. 1083 E⁹: gyrne cleopedon to Gode his miltse biddende (or final?).

Bened.¹ 4. 10: Be ðæm ilican andgyte ðe hælend cwirð on ðæm halgan godspelle ðus elypiende = 8. 16: Unde et Dominus in Evangelio ait.—Ib. 11. 8: hy ðæah forhogiende me forsavon = 18. 21: ipsi autem contemnentes spreverunt me (or modal?).

Ælfric.—Hom. 1. 104⁷: ðæs Fæder stemn of heofenum hlude swegde, ðus cweftende.—Ib. 1. 294⁷: him to spræc ymbe Godes rice, samod mid him reordigende.

Gosp.—Mat. 8. 31: ða deosla sodlice hyne bædon, ðus cweftende = Dæmones autem rogabant eum dicentes.—Ib. 9. 30: se h. bebead him cweftende = comminatus est illis Jesus, dicens.—Ib. 11. 25: Se h. cwæð andswariende = respondens Jesus dixit.—Ib. 12. 10: hi ahsudun hyne ðus cweftende = interrogabant eum, dicentes.—Ib. 13. 31: He rehte him ða gyt oðer big-spel, ðus cweftende = . . . proposuit eis, dicens.

—Mk. 3. 11: ðus cweftende clypedon = clamabant dicentes.

Wulfst. 199. 15: be ðæm awrat Iohannes on ðære bec, ðe man hat apocalipsin, ðus cweftende. So 201. 8.—Ib. 246. 11: swa se witega ðe læð ðus cweftende: sepi aures tuas spinis.

Benet.¹ 30. 14: gewrit bebyt seegende = scriptura præcipit dicens.

II. In Poetry.

Andr. 59: He ða wepende weregum tearum his sigedrihten sargan reorde, grette gumena brego geomran stefne.

Christ 387: Forðan hy, dædhwæte, dome geswiðde, ðæt sodfiæste seraphinnes cynn, uppe mid englum a bremende, unaðreotendum ðrymmum singað. [Hertel: pred. after intransitive verb.]—Ib. 992: Wepað wanende wergum
steñnum, heane, hygegeomre, hreowum gedreahte. [Hertel: attrib., but Gollance: "weep and moan"]

Guth. 401: Bonan gnornedon, mædon murnende, sæt etc. [May be adjectival or modal.]—Ib. 879: hwilum wedende swa wilde deor círmndon on corðre.

Jul. 662: Wælric me sînceð, sæt ge væccende wið het-tendra hildewan man wearde healdan.

*Spirit of Men* 82: Forðon we sculan a hygende hælo rædes gemuan in mode mêle gehwylcum ðone selestan sigora waldend! Amen!

*Harrowing of Hell* 91: ðonne hy gehyrdon, hu we hreow[wïge] [mændo]n murnende mæg burg usse. [May be adjectival or modal.]

*Mt. Ps.* 104. 10: And him ða mid soðe sægde, cwæðende = Et statuit illud Jacob in præceptum, et Israel in testamentum æternum, *dicens.*—Ib. 105. 4: Gemune us, drihten, on mod-sefau forð *hygende* folces ðínes ð us mid hælo her geneose = Memento nostri, Domine, in beneplacito populi tui; visita nos in salutari tuo.—Ib. 138. 17: Blodhreowe weras! ge bebugað me, ðe sæt on geðohtum ðencað cwæðende = Viri sanguinum declinate a me; quia *dicitis* in cogitationibus vestris. [Cf. 104. 10: where cwæðende = *dicens.*]—Ib. 146. 10: Se ðe mete syleð manegum neatum, hrefnes briddum, ðonne heo *hropende* him ciged to, cuðes æces = Sui dat jumentis escam ipsorum, et pullis corvorum *invocantibus eum.*

**NOTES.**

1. **Present Participle in a Passive Sense.**—I have found no instance of the present participle used in a passive sense in Old English. [Cf. Kellner, *Syntax des Englisches Verbums*, p. 85 f.; Koch, II, p. 72; Mätzner, II, p. 56; Sweet, § 2312; and, for the Germanic languages in general, Q. Erdmann, *Grundzüge*, I, § 132 f.; Falk and Torp, § 138, i; and Grimm, iv, p. 68.]
2. Passive Participle in an Active Sense.—The preterite participle of intransitive verbs has an active sense, such as *cumem, forðfered*, etc.: *Bede* 396. 20: in ðære he *forðfered* bebyrged beon sceolde = 228. 9: in quo *defunctus* condi debere; *Ælf. L. S.* 462. 351: *ond* hi becomon to sumum *senlicum felda* *siegre* *geblowen* (sic!); *Bl. Hom.* 87. 36: *bevealde* to *Hælendes cneowum*, he cwede; *Mat.* 7. 6: hig *sone* ongean *gewende* cew toslyton = conversi dirumpant vos. Cf. *bewend* in *Mk.* 5. 30; *L.* 7. 9, 10. 23, etc. Occasionally, too, the past participle of transitive verbs has an active sense: *Greg.* 1 435. 1: gif hi *færlesor* syngoden *unbeðohte* = 360. 7: si in his sola *practicitatione* cecidissent (or adverb?); *Ælf. L. S.* xxiv. 2: *wan* twegen kyningas on *crist* gelyfe; *ib.*: xxv. 109, xxviii. 15, etc. (see Statistics); *Ælf. Hom.* 1. 66. 12: *sone* færlice gewitt he of ðissere worulde, nacod and *forscyldigod*. But, as in High German (see Grimm as cited below), the use of the preterite participle in an active sense occurs usually, not when the participle is appositive, but when it is attributive or predicative, or has been substantivized; under one of which heads come most of the examples cited by Mätzner, March, Schrader, and Sohrauer. *Druncen* in *wine* *druncen* and in *beore druncen*, cited by Mätzner and by March as active, seems to me passive in sense. [See Kellner, *Syntax des Verbums*, p. 97 f.; Koch, ii, p. 72; Mätzner, iii, p. 93; March, § 455; Schrader, § 104; Sohrauer, p. 31; Sweet, § 2356; and, for Germanics, O. Erdmann, *Grundzüge I.*, § 133; Falk and Torp, § 138, ii; Grimm, iv, p. 73.]

3. Supplementary Particles.—Only slight use is made of supplementary particles, which serve the more clearly to indicate the relationship of the participial to the main clause. They seem to be confined to the late *West Saxon* prose. Examples: *swa swa*: *Ælf. L. S.* xxiii. B. 234: ongan he sworettan *swa swa* *eallunga* gewæced on *ðam* oreðe belocen; *swa seah*: *Ælf. Hept.* Numb. 15. 44: Hig *swa seah* ablende

4. Pleonastic "and."—As with the absolute participle (see Absolute Participle in Anglo-Saxon, p. 21) so with the appositive there is occasionally a pleonastic and: Bede¹ 450. 20; Oros.¹ 12. 32, 33; Bl. Hom. 243. 7; Aelf. L. S. xxiii. B. 542, 560, 588, etc., etc. The same is true of Gothic and of Old High German (Gering, p. 401).

I close this chapter with tables showing the distribution of the appositive participle in its several uses (adjectival, adverbial, and co-ordinate), in the whole of Anglo-Saxon Literature.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Adjectival</th>
<th>Adverbial</th>
<th>Co-ordinate</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bedel</td>
<td>107</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Callaway, Jr.</td>
<td>73</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boeth.</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greg.</td>
<td>58</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prent.</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oros.</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Th.</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prent.</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Laws.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bened.</td>
<td>63</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prent.</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bl. Hom.</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>477</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elf. Hom.</td>
<td>199</td>
<td>134</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elf. L. S.</td>
<td>335</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elf. de V.</td>
<td>208</td>
<td>152</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>et N. T.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elf. Hept.</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A. S. Hom.</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&amp; L. S. I.</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A. S. Hom.</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&amp; L. S. II.</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### II.—In the Poems.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Poem</th>
<th>Pres</th>
<th>Pret</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Beow.</td>
<td>62</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gen.</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Exod.</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dan.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christ</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elene</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jul.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Guy.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rid.</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>And.</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phoen.</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Metr.</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Metr. Ps.</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Poem</th>
<th>Pres</th>
<th>Pret</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Gosp.</td>
<td>227</td>
<td>67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wulst.</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benet.</td>
<td>103</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| Total Present | 1636  |
| Total Preterite | 807   |
| Total Pres. & Pret. | 2443  |

---

1 Without object, 368; with object, 101.
2 Without object, 217; with object, 5.
### SUMMARY OF USES.

#### II.—In the Poems.—Continued.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Adjective-Ival</th>
<th>Adverbial</th>
<th>Co-ordinate</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Minor Poems:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Az.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cal. S.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charms</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christ's Descent, etc.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Creed</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Doomsday</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dream of Rood.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Durham</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>...</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eadgar</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eadward</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fallen</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Angels</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fates of Men</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gloria</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prett.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

294
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Pret.</th>
<th>Pres.</th>
<th>Total Present</th>
<th>Total Preterite</th>
<th>Total Pres. &amp; Pret.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Gnom. V</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harrowing of H.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Husband's Message</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hymn</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Inscription</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maldon</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rune Song</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sal. and Sat.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seafarer</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Soul to Body</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spirit of Men</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Summons to Prayer</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Waldere</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wanderer</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Whale</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Widsith of Wonders</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Creation of</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1 Two in Lat.
2 Without object, 69; with object, 7.
### SUMMARY OF USES.

#### III.—IN THE PROSE AND IN THE POETRY.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Adjectival</th>
<th>Adverbial</th>
<th>Co-ordinate</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>222</td>
<td>95</td>
<td>212</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>48</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres. in Prose...</td>
<td>1636</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres. in Poetry..</td>
<td>148</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total Pres........</td>
<td>1784</td>
<td>270</td>
<td>107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret. in Prose...</td>
<td>807</td>
<td>525</td>
<td>89</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret. in Poetry..</td>
<td>4:9</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total Pret.......</td>
<td>1226</td>
<td>609</td>
<td>237</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total Pres.......</td>
<td>1784</td>
<td>270</td>
<td>107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total Pret.......</td>
<td>1226</td>
<td>609</td>
<td>237</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grand Total......</td>
<td>3010</td>
<td>879</td>
<td>344</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

- Mod. = Modifier
- Temp. = Temporal
- Cause. = Cause
- Fin. = Final
- Conc. = Conclusive
- Cond. = Conditional
CHAPTER III.

ORIGIN OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

Is the appositive use of the participle a native English idiom, or is it borrowed from the Latin?

The only direct expressions that are known to me on this question are from Einenkel and myself. In his *Mittelenglische Syntax* (Münster, 1887), p. 273, in treating the present participle, Einenkel says: "Das Part. in appositiver Stellung (im Deutschen wiederzugeben durch Adjectiv-Satz) findet sich gelegentlich im AE., häufiger im Afranz., ist jedoch wol in keinem Falle ein einheimisches Gewächs, sondern stammt aus dem Lat., wo die Construction eine ganz gewöhnliche ist. Die verbale Kraft, die das so verwendete lat. part. besitzt, zeigt sich im AE. und Afranz." And in his chapter on English Syntax in Paul's *Grundriss*², § 129a, he thus speaks of the preterite participle: "Zu erwähnen ist hier die schon im Altenglischen bekannte später zunehmende appositionelle Verwendung desselben, die vom Lateinischen hervorgerufen und später vom Altfranzösischen vielleicht auch vom Altnordischen unterstützt wird." Einenkel, then, holds that the appositive use of both the present and the past participle in Anglo-Saxon is due to Latin influence.

Before reading Einenkel's treatment I had come to the same general conclusion myself on noticing how sedulously Alfred avoided the use of the appositive participle in his translations from the Latin. And in my monograph on *The Absolute Participle in Anglo-Saxon* (p. 50), in treating of the stylistic effect of the participle in Anglo-Saxon, I incidentally recorded this belief: "Clearly relief was needed here [i.e., from the
heaping up of co-ordinate finite verbs] ; and it came through the adoption of the appositive participle from the Latin.”

An indirect statement concerning the origin is this by Th. Müller (p. 250): “Doch ist hinzuzufügen, dass die Verwendung der Participten zur Satzverkürzung im Ags. eine ziemlich beschränkte ist, namentlich die Verwendung des absoluten Particips. . . . Im Englischen hat die Anwendung des Part. zur Satzverkürzung sehr an Umfang gewonnen, besonders durch Einwirkung des Französischen und Lateinischen . . . Im Ae. ist die Satzverkürzung durch das Partic. noch beschränkt und nicht viel ausgedehnter, als im Ags.” A. Erdmann cautiously expresses himself as follows (p. 30): “However common this use [i. e., the appositive] of the participle present, as shown in ii: 1:0, undoubtedly is, still the general run of the language seems to be opposed to the too frequent recurrence of it. There are to be found in the Gospels, in spite of the general closeness of the translation, numerous instances of co-ordinate finite verbs or subordinate clauses substituted for Latin-Greek participles present. In many of these passages the English translation readmits the participle, conformably to the original text.” Owen (p. 61) seems to consider the construction native to English, though somewhat influenced by the Latin; but, as his statement is indefinite, it need not be quoted.

The statements of both Einenkel and myself were in the nature of the case incidental and general. May not the present detailed study of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon enable us to make definite statements with reference to at least several of the uses of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon? I believe it will; and I turn, therefore, to the consideration of the several distinctive uses of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon.

I. The Adjectival Use.

The appositive use of the present participle that is equivalent to a dependent adjectival (relative) clause, seems to have been largely due to Latin influence and never to have gained
a secure foothold in Anglo-Saxon, because, as my appended tables show:—(1) This use is rare in Early West Saxon. (2) In most of these Early West Saxon examples, the Anglo-Saxon participle is in direct translation of a Latin appositive participle. (3) The construction is rare, also, in the more original prose (the Chronicle, the Laws, and Wulfstan). (4) It is very rare, too, in the poetry; and most of these examples occur in poems known to be translations of Latin originals. (5) It is common in Ælfric, in the Gospels, and in Benet. Of the 13 examples in the Heptateuch all but 2 are translations from the Latin; of the 44 examples in the Gospels every participle except 1; and of the 32 in Benet all except 2. Despite this, it is possible that the appositive use of a few slightly verbal participles like blissigende and gefeonde (see Bl. Hom. 5, 8a b, p. 186 above), and liibende and liegende (see Laws: Cnut ii, c. 24, Intr. 8a b, p. 181 above) may be the native extension of the attributive use of such participles in postposition, the apposition arising from the fact that we have a series of participles, some with modifiers. [See above pp. 149, 152, and below on the origin of the adjectival appositive preterite participle.]

Whether the foregoing be accepted or not, this much seems certain: the appositive present participle with a direct object is not native to English, a topic the treatment of which is deferred to the close of this chapter (p. 307).

On the contrary, the adjectival use of the appositive preterite participle is probably native; or, if first suggested by the Latin, was soon naturalized. To me this use seems merely the extension of the attributive use of the preterite participle in postposition (see pp. 149, 152 above) when there was a series of participles modifying a single noun, or when the participle had an object or a somewhat extended adverbial modifier; as in: Ælf. Hept. (Exod. 12. 19): ne ete ge nan ðing onhafenes, ne utan cymene ne innan lande geborene; ib. 29. 23: ðu ðynst . . . anne holne hlaf mid ele gesprengedne; Beow. 1126: Gewiton him ða wigend wica neosian freondum befeal-
len Fryslans gecon. This difference as to the origin of the appositive present and of the appositive preterite participle is not in reality so strange as may at first appear; for, as already stated in the Introduction, the preterite participle is much more adjectival in nature than is the present participle; and, as our statistics show, in Anglo-Saxon the appositive use of the participle (whether present or past, and in whatever function) is in keeping with this general principle: the construction is most frequent when the participle manifests most of its descriptive (adjectival) and least of its assertive (verbal) power.

Whatever the explanation, it is a fact that the adjectival use of the preterite appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon is far more common than that of the present participle, and it seems thoroughly naturalized, if not native. For our tables show (1) that the construction is common in Early West Saxon, in the more original prose works, and in the poetry, as well as in Ælfric, the Gospels, and Benet; and (2) that in the translations, notably in the Heptateuch, a considerable fraction of the appositive preterite participles used adjectivally are not translations of Latin participles.

The same distinction between the appositive present and the appositive preterite participle is found in the other Germanic languages (see chapter v).

II. The Adverbial Use.

1. Modal.

(1) Manner.

The appositive use of the participle (present and past) denoting manner, was probably native to Anglo-Saxon; if not, it was certainly early naturalized. We find this use very often in Early West Saxon, often in Ælfric and the Gospels, and occasionally in the more original prose and in the poetry. Moreover, in the translations, the Anglo-Saxon participle
corresponds not only to Latin participles, but also to Latin prepositional phrases, to nouns in the ablative, to finite verbs, to adjectives, and to adverbs; while in not a few cases there is no Latin corresponding to the Anglo-Saxon participle. Nor is the participle denoting manner confined to the poems known to be translations; on the contrary, the largest number of examples in any single poem is found in Beowulf. Finally, it may be said that in this use the participle has but slight verbal power; and hence the fact that the construction was native to Anglo-Saxon (or, if this be not allowed, was early naturalized), is what we should expect after what has been said above concerning the lack of verbal power in the Anglo-Saxon participle.

(2) Means.

The appositive use of the participle denoting means was in all probability not native to the English, but was borrowed from the Latin. It is found chiefly in the more direct translations and in the works of Ælfric, and in the former almost invariably corresponds to a Latin participle or to a Latin gerund in the ablative, in the majority of cases to the latter. It is practically unknown in the more original prose and in the poetry. Since the verbal power is more prominent in the participle denoting means than in that denoting manner, we need not be surprised at the difference in the origin (or the naturalness) of the two.

The modal participle in both of its uses has substantially the same history in the other Germanic languages (chapter v).

2. Temporal.

With the exception of a few slightly verbal participles like being, living, and sleeping, the temporal use of the appositive participle, strange as it may seem, can hardly have been a native idiom in Anglo-Saxon. When it occurs in the prose translations, it is with but a few exceptions a direct transla-
tion of a Latin appositive participle. Only two examples occur in the more original prose (Laws, 1: Ine C. 35: Se ðe ðeo ðeof sliðs, he mot aðe becgðan, ðæt he hine fleondne for ðeof slega; and Wulfstan, 1: 295. 14: hi scelon fleonde on gefehte beon ofslagene). As to the poetry, most of the examples occur in the poems that rest upon Latin originals. 14 examples, however, occur in Beowulf, nine in the present and five in the preterite (lifgende: 815 and 1953; unlifgendum: 1389; sleæpende: 1581 and 2219; wesende (usually in composition with emiht and umbor): 46, 372, 535, 1187; druncen (in beore and wine druncen): 480, 531, 1467; forðgewitenum: 1479, which may be adjectival; and fylle gef(r)ægnod: 1333). But after all only five different words are involved; these are often used adjectivally, and the temporal use here may be partly due to that fact.* At any rate, the temporal use of the appositive participle can hardly be considered organic in a work showing only five words so used. Moreover, in Anglo-Saxon, time relations are normally denoted by a finite verb introduced by a subordinating conjunction, as is evidenced by its habitual rendering of the Latin temporal participle (see chapter iv).

In the other Germanic languages, also, the temporal use is restricted to participles of slightly verbal power, like being, living, sleeping (chapter v).

3. Causal.

The use of the appositive participle to denote cause seems, in the main, to be an imitation of the Latin. Few examples occur in Early West Saxon; and the majority of these as of those in other translations correspond to Latin participles, though a few answer to substantives in the ablative or to adverbs. The construction is exceedingly rare in the more

*Einikenkel (Mittelengl. Syntax, p. 279) derives the temporal use of the preterite appositive participle from the adjectival (relative) use of the same.
original prose, there being but two examples in the *Chronicle*
(1087 E: *geseonde*, which has an object and is therefore to be
excluded from consideration; 449 A: Hengest & Horsa from
Wyrtgeorne *geleæode*, Bretta kyninge, gesohton Bretene (MS.
E: *gelaæode* Wyrtgeorn Angelcyn hider; MS. F: *com Angel-
cynn* to Æisum lande, *gelaæode* from Wyrtgeorne cinge) and
two in Wulfstan (133. 5a & 5b: sculon eowre heortan eargjan
swiðe and eowra feonda lægen strængjan ðearle, and ge
lofesæde swiðe afirihtæ oft litel werod earhlícæ forbugaÈ= 131. 23: et animam uestræm tabescætem faciam, et perse-
quentur nos inimici uestri, et fugietis nullo persequentæ).
In the poetry, but five examples occur with the present parti-
ciple; two have an object (*Andreas* 1, and *Guðlac* 1) and are
therefore not to be considered; while three occur in poems
based on Latin originals (*Genesis* 2, *Exodus* 1). In all proba-
bility, then, the causal use of the present appositive participle
is not native to Anglo-Saxon poetry. As to the past participle,
as I have already said in a preceding chapter, many of
the examples are doubtful and may be considered adjectival
(relative). K. Köhler, for example, does not consider as causal
any one of the nine examples that I have classed as such in
*Beowulf*. Most of the other causal preterite participles in
Anglo-Saxon poetry are in poems based on Latin originals;
those in the prose have been discussed in the beginning of
this paragraph.

It seems highly probable, therefore, that the causal use of
the present participle in both prose and poetry is due to
Latin influence; it seems probable that the causal use of the
preterite participle is largely due to Latin influence, but that
it is partly an extension of the adjectival use of the preterite
participle, which latter has been shown to be so common in
Anglo-Saxon. As is shown in chapter IV, the Latin causal
participle is in Anglo-Saxon normally translated by a sub-
ordinated finite verb.

For the other Germanic languages, see chapter V.
4. Final.

The appositive participle denoting purpose is mainly from the Latin. But three examples occur in Early West Saxon, two corresponding to Latin participles and one to a Latin infinitive of purpose. No example has been found in the more original prose. The instances in the Gospels and in Benet correspond invariably to a Latin participle. The single example in the poetry (already quoted: Dan. 355: nergende) is from a poem based on the Latin. A still further reason for considering the final use unoriginal is this: 35 of the 39 present participles have an object (see p. 307 below). But, as the statistics show that the final participle in Old English occurs, as in Latin (Gildersleeve, Latin Grammar, § 670, 3), chiefly after verbs of motion, it may well be that the very frequent predicative use of the participle in Anglo-Saxon after verbs of motion contributed somewhat to its appositive use to denote purpose.

See, further, chapters IV and V.

5. Concessive.

The concessive use of the appositive participle is likewise to be ascribed to Latin influence. Of the three examples found in Early West Saxon, two are direct translations of Latin participles; while the third (ungeniedde in Oros. 250. 14), though without a Latin correspondence in this particular instance, answers to (non)coacti, which occurs elsewhere in Alfred’s Latin originals (as in Bede’s 29. 12: co-acti = 8. 5: genedde). No instance of the concessive participle has been found in the more original prose. Each example in the Gospels is in translation of a Latin participle. Of the eight examples in the poems, that in Beowulf (2350: nearo neðende) is considered modal by K. Köhler; the other seven occur in poems known to be from Latin originals (one each in Elene, Genesis, Guðlac,
The appositive participle denoting a condition is probably due to Latin influence. Four examples occur in Early West Saxon, of which one corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (Bede 278. 18*), one to a Latin absolute participle (Boeth. 91. 8), while two have no correspondents in Latin (Boeth. 30. 25, 26). Of the two examples in Benedict, one answers to a Latin participle, and one is without a correspondent. The two examples in the Gospels are translations of Latin participles, as are also the four in Benet. Only one example occurs in the remainder of Anglo-Saxon prose. Of the sixteen examples in the poetry, two are in Beowulf (1368: geswenced; 1370: geflymed), one in Eadgar (11 A: geteled rimes) three in Genesis (geteled rime(s) in 1263, 1336, and in 2344), two in Exodus 232: geteled tireadigra, 372: geteled rime), three in Andreas (309 (?): maximum bedæled, 883: twelwe getealde, 1035: geteled rime), two in Elene (2: geteled rimes, 634: geteled rime), two in the Riddles (24. 15: unbunden, 24. 16: searoseæled), and one in the Metrical Psalms (67. 17: geteled rime).* In ten of these examples, however, the same word (geteled nine times, getealde once) is used; and, besides, the participle is not unmistakably conditional. From its frequent occurrence in Anglo-Saxon and its occasional employment in Old Saxon (Heliand 1251: twelivi gitalda), this seems to have been a favorite locution; but its use appears to have been phraseo-

*The translation of this phrase by Grimm (computati numero, note to Elene 1085 in his Andreas u. Elene), by Grein (gezült der Zal nach, in his Glossary sub v. rim), and by Kent (the number told, note to Elene 2) is, like the original, ambiguous, except that Kent does say that the participial phrase is used adverbially. Pratje (§ 158) considers the O. S. gitalda to be attributive.
logical rather than syntactical. The Beowulf examples, also, are doubtful. We know, too, that in Anglo-Saxon a condition is regularly denoted by a subordinated finite verb. I believe, therefore, that the use of the appositive participle to denote a condition is not a native English idiom, but was perhaps borrowed from the Latin.

See, too, chapters IV and V.

III. The Co-ordinate Use.

The co-ordinate participle, in both its "circumstantial" and its "iterating" uses, is a direct importation from the Latin. No clear example of the co-ordinate participle occurs in Gregory, and only sixteen examples in the remainder of Alfred's works, each time in direct translation of a Latin participle. Three examples occur in the Chronicle and five in Wulfstan, all present participles with an object, and all due to Latin influence (see p. 307 below). No example is found in the Laws.

With about a dozen exceptions all the examples in Benedict, in the Gospels, and in Benet are translations of Latin participles. In the Prose Psalms, however, only one of the sixteen co-ordinate participles answers to a Latin participle; but thirteen are present participles with an object, and, therefore, cannot be native English (p. 307).

In the poems, only nineteen examples occur: one in Beowulf (916: flitende), one in Andreas (59: wepende), four in Christ (387: bremende, 992: wanende, 950: brecende, 1016: sorgende), two in Guthlac (401: murnende, 879: wedende), one in Julian (662: wæccende), one in Spirit of Men (82: hyegende), one in the Harrowing of Hell (91: murnende), three in the Metres of Boethius (20. 212: smeagende, 20. 214, 221: secende), and five in the Metrical Psalms (50. 56: cerrende, 104. 10: cweðende = dicens, 105. 4: hyegende, 138. 17: cweðende = dicitis, 146. 10: hropende = invocantibus). With the exception of Beow. 916 (which may not be co-ordinate) and of Spirit of Men 82 (of which I do not know the source), all the examples are from
poems known to be based on Latin originals. Two of the examples are in direct translation of Latin participles (Metr. Ps. 104. 10: *cweþende* = *dicens*; 146. 10: *hropende* = *invocantibus*), to which may confidently be added a third (Metr. Ps. 138. 17: *cweþende*), though here answering to a finite verb, *dicitus*. Finally, the majority of the remaining examples (like *brecende, murnende, sorgende, wæccende, wanende, wedende,* and *wepende*) really waver between the co-ordinate use on the one hand and the adjectival and the modal on the other; indeed, *brecende, murnende, sorgende,* and *wanende* are expressly declared to be attributive by Hertel and by Furkert, and I have put them here despite their extreme doubtfulness merely to avoid the appearance of bending statistics to conformity with a theory. The few clear cases that remain of the co-ordinate use (like *cerrende, hygende, secende,* and *smægenden*) may, I think, safely be attributed to Latin influence. The Latin co-ordinate participle is in Anglo-Saxon usually rendered by a co-ordinate finite verb (chapter iv). The co-ordinate participle is likewise uncommon in the other Germanic languages (chapter v).

**The Governing Power of the Participle.**

1. **The Present Participle.**

I conclude with a remark that applies equally to each of the three uses of the appositive participle: the present appositive participle with a direct object, no matter whether its use is adjectival, adverbial, or co-ordinate, is always in imitation of the Latin. For the Anglo-Saxon present participle, when used appositively, seems originally not to have had the power of governing a direct object in construction,—a fact not noticed hitherto so far as I am aware. This statement is substantiated, I believe, by the following considerations:—

1. Very few examples of a present participle having an object occur in Early West Saxon. Only eighteen examples
have been found in the works of Ælfric, distributed as follows: Bede 14, Gregory 2, Orosius 2.

2. With two exceptions each of these eighteen examples in Early West Saxon is a translation of a Latin appositive participle with a direct object. In one of the exceptional cases (Greg.¹ 171. 13: lærende (MS. C.: beoð lærende) = 126*: praedicando) the Anglo-Saxon participle translates a Latin gerund in the ablative; in the other (Oros.¹ 52. 27) the accusative seems to belong to the finite verb as well as to the participle (see Statistics).

3. In hundreds of instances the Early West Saxon translators (Ælfric and his helpers) clearly avoided turning the Latin participle with an object by an Anglo-Saxon participle with an object (see chapter iv).

4. An object is exceedingly rare in the more original prose works, there being but four examples in the Chronicles, one in the Laws, and six in Wulfstan; in all eleven instances.

5. In every one of these eleven examples the participle can be traced directly or indirectly to a Latin source. In the Chronicle, biddende (1083 E), eweðende, which occurs twice (656 E, 675 E, both already quoted above), and geseonde (1087 E), may be due to the Latin petens, dicens, and videns, which latter occur so often in the Vulgate New Testament, in Gregory's Cura Pastorialis, in Bede's Historia Ecclesiastica, and in other books that we may assume to have been in the hands of the compiler of MS. E., especially as this MS. is itself occasionally interlarded with Latin. Or, since it was written about 1121 (Plummer, ii, § 26), the editor of E. could have borrowed these participles from the Anglo-Saxon Gospels or from the works of Ælfric, in both of which they abound. The single example in the Laws (Wihtr. C. 18: Preost hine clænsie sylfes soð, in his halgum hrægle ætforan wifode, ðus eweðende: "Ueritatem dico in Christo, non mentor") may confidently be ascribed to Latin influence, not only that it is eweðende, but that the participle is immediately followed by a quotation in Latin. As to Wulfstan, four of the examples
are *cweðende* (105. 30, 199. 15, 201. 8, 246. 11), which here as elsewhere is to be ascribed to Latin influence. *dicens (dicentes)* occurs five times in Wulfstan, though not in the above examples; twice it is translated by a co-ordinated finite (60. 14, 87. 15) and once by a subordinated finite verb (87. 18), and twice it is not translated at all (31. 32, 77. 3). Moreover, in two instances (201. 8, 246. 11) *cweðende* immediately precedes a quotation in Latin. The other two examples in Wulfstan (244. 7\(^b\): *gemende*, 278. 9: *scægejende*: see Statistics) sound like translations from the ritual. Be this as it may, the participle may unhesitatingly be ascribed to Latin influence; for in Wulfstan there are interlarded with the Anglo-Saxon fourteen Latin present participles with an object.

6. Very few objects are found with the present participle in the poetry, only twenty-three in all, distributed as follows: *Beowulf* four (1227: dream *healdende*; 2106: *fela friegende* (but K. Köhler considers *fela* an adverb); 2350: nearo *neðende*; 1829: *sec hettende*, which may be substantival, as K. Köhler construes it), Cynewulf’s *Christ* one (1271: *wræc winnende*, Grein\(^1\) and Gollancz\(^1\&2\): *wræcwinnende*), *Andreas* three (570: dom *agende*, 491: mere *hrerendum*, mundum freorig, 300: wine *særfende*), *Elene* two (1096: god *hergendra*, 1220: god *hergendum*), *Doomsday* one (112: dea\(^3\) *beæningende* tacen = signa minantia mortem), *Judith* one (272: mid toðon torn *soligende*: cf. *Ps.* 111. 9: torn toðum *Solian* = dentibus fremere), *Daniel* two (355: *feorh nerigende*, 396: *lean sellende*), Guthlac one (1029: torn *Soliende*: cf. *Judith* 272), *Juliana* one (6: god *hergendra*: cf. *Elene* 1096, 1220), *Spirit of Men* one (82: *hygrende hælo rædes*), *Wonders of Creation* two (14: *friengende fira cynnes*, 15: *seegende searo-runa gespon*), *Metrical Psalms* four (104. 10: *cweðende = dicens*; 138. 17: *cweðende = dicitis*; 105. 17: *hæðenstyres big etendes = in similitudinem comedentis forænum*; 105. 4: gemune us, drihten, on modsæfan forð *hygende folces ðines = memento nostri, Domine, in beneplacito populi tui*).
these twenty-three participles, three (Doomsday 112, Metr. Ps. 104. 10 and 105. 17) are direct translations of corresponding Latin participles with an object; and to this class we may add a fourth (Metr. Ps. 138. 17), for the cuođende here, though corresponding to dicitis, must be due to dicens, which occurs not infrequently in the Latin Psalms. But what about the remaining nineteen examples? In the first place it is to be noticed that, except in four instances (Spirit of Men 82, Wonders of Creation 14 and 15, and Metr. Ps. 105. 4), the object immediately precedes its participle; that, though they are not so printed in Grein-Wülker, possibly we have accusative compounds (except in Beow. 1829), which compounds are in the main descriptive epithets, as are the hyphenated accusative compounds. And an object in an accusative compound seems to me to stand on an entirely different footing from an object in construction (cf. Strong, Logeman, Wheeler, p. 334, and Storch, p. 25). The accusative compound is often made because the Anglo-Saxon had no single word for the idea to be expressed, as when the translator of the Psalms (81. 2) turns the Latin peccator by syn-wyroende, etc. Oftener, perhaps, the compound is made for the sake of its picturesqueness; hence it is more frequent in poetry than in prose. That the participles which govern an object in composition do stand by themselves and that their governing an object in composition does not necessarily imply an antecedent power of governing an object in construction is attested, I think, by the fact that only one or two of the participles with an object in composition are found, also, with an object in construction. This principle by itself might account for most of the participles under consideration. But we see, further, that of these participles eleven occur in works known to be translations from the Greek or the Latin (Andreas 3, Christ 1, Elene 2, Judith 1, Daniel 2, Guthlac 1, Juliana 1), and the participles here may be due in part to the influence of the participles in the originals, even if at times, as in the two examples from the Elene, the Anglo-Saxon participles correspond, not to
Latin participles, but to Latin finite verbs. It will be observed, also, that in these eleven examples there are only eight different participles, the participle of horgian occurring three times and that of solian twice. As to the four participles with objects following in construction, I think that they must be ascribed to foreign influence, though I cannot definitely trace that influence in three of the examples, as I do not know the sources of the Spirit of Men and the Wonders of Creation. Hycgende of Metr. Ps. 105. 4 may safely be ascribed to the influence of the Latin participles of the Psalter, though none is found in the particular verse corresponding to this line.

7. An object is likewise rare in the other Germanic languages, especially in High German and in Old Saxon, as will be shown in chapter v.

8. The only fact known to me that seems to militate against the assumption that the present participle in Anglo-Saxon had not, originally, the power of governing an object, is this: in the Prose Psalms there are thirteen examples of the present participle with an object, no one of which is known to have a Latin appositive participle as its original correspondent. All of these participles occur in the Introductions to the Psalms. And, in his very able discussion of the Paris Psalter (p. 64 ff.), Bruce has shown that these Introductions are paraphrases of Latin originals, principally of the argumenta in the commentary In Psalmorum Librum Exegesis. In the originals as given by Bruce I find but two correspondences to our participles: in Psalms 34 siofigende corresponds to a substantive in the ablative with a genitive modifier (Dauid sang ðysne fæower and ðrittigoðan sealm, siofigende to Drihtne his yrmiða = occasione ærumnarum suarum David hunc psalmum in tempore Jeremise componit, etc.), and in Ps. 38 to an ablative absolute (Dauid sang ðysne eahta and ðrittigoðan sealm, sefigende to Drihtne, mid hu manegum unrotnessum he was ofðryced under Sawle = Angentibus sub Saule mæroribus, hunc
psalmum cecinit etc.); while in the remaining eleven examples (37: andettende, 28: bebeodende, 33: gehatende, 39: gylpende (w. gen.), 32: herigende, 47: myliende, 37: seofigende: 43: seofigende, 32: ðanciende, 45: ðanciende, 31: wundriende (w. gen.)) there is no Latin correspondence. It will be observed, however, that, since one word is repeated four times (seofigende) and another twice (ðanciende), only seven words are involved; that, although there are no participles in the Latin corresponding to the Anglo-Saxon participles, participles are abundant in the Latin originals; that, as Bruce shows, the Prose Psalms are the work of an ecclesiastic; and that the Anglo-Saxon participles are those the Latin correspondents of which must have been often before the eyes and upon the lips of an ecclesiastic (such as confessens, postulans, benedicens, etc.). While, then, in the Prose Psalms the number of present participles with an object for which no immediate Latin source has been found, does seem to militate against the statement that originally in Anglo-Saxon the present participle had not the power of governing an object, in reality it does not: the author was an ecclesiastic and naturally molded his English translation on the pattern of what was at once his official language and his literary source.

9. In Late West Saxon, to be sure, especially in Ælfric and in the Gospels, there are numerous present participles with direct objects; but this fact does not invalidate the contention that in Anglo-Saxon the present participle had not the governing power originally. It will be observed, further, that in the Late West Saxon translations the participles with objects usually correspond to Latin participles with objects (25 times out of 36 in the Heptateuch, 117 times out of 122 in the Gospels, and 62 times out of 63 in Benet); and that in scores of instances the Latin participle is translated into Anglo-Saxon by a finite verb. The frequency of the participle with an object in Ælfric's Homilies and in his Lives of Saints is due, of course, to the fact that, as he tells us, these
works are translations from the Latin. The rareness of the present participle with an object in the poems and in the more original prose, especially in the late Wulfstan, would seem to indicate that, despite its great frequency in Ælfric and in the Gospels, this construction was never thoroughly naturalized in Anglo-Saxon.

10. Whenever it does govern an object, the present participle, as our examples show, has the same regimen as the verb from which it is derived. We find as object occasionally the genitive (Gregory¹ 99. 4: wiðigende; Metr. Ps. 105. 4: hyegende; etc., etc.) and the dative (Bede¹ 426. 30: biosmri-endes; Ælf. Hom. π. 128b: sèowigende; etc., etc.), but usually the accusative (see Statistics).—In the preceding discussion as to the origin of the present participle with a direct object I have included not only the accusative, but all the cases that from the modern English standpoint appear to be direct objects and, in the Early West Saxon texts and in the poems, all participles with objects, whether direct or not.

2. The Preterite Participle.

1. With reference to the preterite participle, the word object, as stated in the prefatory note to the Statistics, is used to include not only the object in the ordinary sense, but also any noun modifier of the participle. We find with the preterite participle the object in the genitive (Ælf. L. S. xxiii. B. 442: ðæles fylstes bedæled; Beow. 845: niða ofercumen; Gen. 2344: geteled rimes; etc., etc.), the dative (Ælf. Hom. l. 544b³: deorum geferlæhte; ib. π. 314b: beboda mannum gesette; Bede¹ 172. 26: Ðisse sæmnan Gode gehalgodre weore; etc., etc.), and the instrumental (Bede¹ 214. 11: onlysed ðy lichoman; ib. 344. 28: ðy betstan leode geglenged; etc., etc.). This use of the preterite participle occurs both in the prose and in the poetry, but much more frequently in the latter. The construction seems to be thoroughly natural in Anglo-Saxon.
2. In the whole of Anglo-Saxon literature, however, I have found but one instance of an appositive preterite participle governing an accusative of the direct object, namely, *Luke* 9. 55 (MSS. B. & C.): *hine bewend*, he hig ðreade = *conversus* increpavit illos. The remaining three mss. and the corresponding Glosses here use a finite verb (see p. 225); and Professor Bright in his footnote to the above passage considers *bewend* a slavish translation of the Latin participle. It is scarcely possible to consider as original a construction of which but one example is found in our texts. I believe, therefore, that in Anglo-Saxon the past participle, when used appositively, did not have the power of governing a direct object.

I append tables showing the Latin correspondences of the Anglo-Saxon appositive participles, in their several uses, in the more definite Anglo-Saxon translations from the Latin.
### Bede.\

**A.-S. Ptc. without Object.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret...</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>43</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Boethius.\

**A.-S. Ptc. with Object.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret...</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Gregory

**A.-S. Ptc. without Object.**

**Latin Equivalent.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td></td>
<td>48</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Orosius

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1 This is in the dative.  
2 These are in the genitive.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>Pres........</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>Pres........</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>Pres.........</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>Pres..</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Benedict.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>Pres........</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>Pres........</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>Pres.........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>Pres..</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>6</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Heptateuch

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>16</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>16</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### The Gospels

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>24</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>20</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>6</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>16</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>10</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>15</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>9</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>45</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>75</td>
<td>71</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### METRES OF BOETHIUS.

#### A.-S. Ptc. without Object.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>Pres........</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>Pres........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>Pres.....</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>Pres......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>Pres.........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>Pres......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>Pres....</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### BENET.¹

| Adj. | Pres........ | 16       | 14       | 3       | 2 | 16 | 16 | 8 | 8 | 8 |
| Mod. | Pres........ | 15       | 15       | 3       | 3 | 16 | 16 | 2 | 1 | 1 |
| Temp. | Pres.....    | 8        | 8        | 3       | 3 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| Caus. | Pres......   | 8        | 8        | 3       | 3 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| Fin. | Pres......... | 0        | 0        | 0       | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| Conc. | Pres......   | 0        | 0        | 0       | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| Cond. | Pres.......  | 0        | 0        | 0       | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| Co-ord. | Pres.... | 0        | 0        | 0       | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |

¹: The source of the table is not mentioned in the text.
### PROSE PSALMS

**A.-S. Ptc. with Object.**

**Latin Equivalent.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj. {Pres}</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres......</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret......</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod. {Pres}</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret....</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp. {Pres}</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus. {Pres}</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin. {Pres}</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc. {Pres}</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond. {Pres}</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord. {Pres}</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.
CHAPTER IV.

THE ANGLO-SAXON RENDERING OF THE LATIN APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE.

When not turned by an appositive participle, the Latin appositive participle is translated into Anglo-Saxon as follows:

I. NORMALLY BY A CO-ORDINATED FINITE VERB.

Most frequently the Latin appositive participle is rendered in Anglo-Saxon by a co-ordinated finite verb, though the texts vary widely, as is evident from the table in the footnote. That the co-ordinated finite verb is the most frequent rendering of the Latin appositive participle, while the subordinated finite verb is the commonest translation of the Latin absolute participle (see The Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 36), is doubtless due to the fact that not a few of the Latin appositive participles have what we have denominated the "co-ordinate" use; and this rendition is, therefore, more appropriate for the appositive than for the absolute participle.

1 The proportion of co-ordinated to subordinated finite verbs is as follows:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Bede}^1 &= 2.14:1. \\
\text{Benedict}^1 &= 1:1.97. \\
\text{Benet}^1 &= 1:2. \\
\text{Genesis}^1 &= 5.36:1. \\
\text{Gregory}^1 &= 1:1.56. \\
\text{Matthew}^1 &= 3:1. \\
\text{Poetical Psalms} &= 1:1.88. \\
\text{Prose Psalms} &= 1:1.27.
\end{align*}
\]

The ratio of the total co-ordinated to the total subordinated finite verbs in these works is 1.35:1.
But it must be allowed that no principle has been consistently followed throughout by the Anglo-Saxon translators; and that not infrequently this rendition ignores shades of meaning in the original, and at times does positive violence to the sense. Undoubtedly, however, the modification of the sense of the original is often deliberately made by the translator because of his different conception of the relative importance of the ideas denoted by the Latin verb and the Latin participle.

The co-ordinated verb is usually in the indicative, though occasionally in the optative or the imperative. As a rule, the co-ordinated verb occurs in the same sentence as the verb with which it is co-ordinated, but occasionally it stands in an independent sentence. The clauses are generally united by a conjunction, but sometimes there is no connective.

A few examples will suffice to illustrate the range of the construction:—

(1) **Co-ordinated Indicative**: (a) With a verb in the same sentence: *Bede*² 21. 9: *relinquens* *reuersus* est = 40. 1: *wæs forlætende* ȝ *hwearf*; *Greg.*² 62. 7: Hinc per IENTATION *Dominus* admonet, *dicens* = 91. 19: forðan *myndgode* *Dryhten* ȝ *Essaîam* ȝ *one* *witgan* ȝ *cwæð*; *Mat.* 12. 25: *sciens* dixit = *wiste* ȝ *cwæð*; *Gen.*² 22. 3: Abraham *consurgens* stravit etc. = *A. aras* . . . and ferde.—Other examples: *Bede*² 98. 34 (122. 9), 100. 13 (124. 21); *Greg.*² 24. 2 (45. 13), 76. 18, 21 (111. 6, 9); *Gen.* 42. 7, 9; *Mat.* 24. 2, 25. 18; etc., etc.—(b) With a verb in another sentence: *Greg.*² 70. 17: Coram testamenti arca Dominum consult, exemplum . . . rectoribus *præbens* = 103. 6: fraegn ȝ *ès* *Dryhten* beforan ȝ *ære* earce. . . He *astealde* on ȝ *æm* *bisene*; *Gen.* 42. 3; etc.

(2) **Co-ordinated Optative**: *Greg.*² 394. 23: ne in semi-tipsis *torpentes* opere alios excitent voce = 461. 15: ȝylæs he oðre awoke mid his wordum, ȝ himself *aslawige* godra weorea; *Bede*² 112. 12, 13: *adueniens* . . . peruolauerit, qui . . . *ingrediens* . . . exierit = 136. 1, 2: *Cume* an spearwa,
... fleo ḥ cume ... ut gewite.—Other examples: Bened.² 56. 2 (29. 6), 56. 8 (29. 12); 58. 16 (31. 11); Mat.² 22. 24; etc.

(3) **Co-ordinated Imperative:** Greg.² 150. 24, 25: Et vos domini eadem facite illis, remittentes minas, scientes quod et illorum et vester Dominus est in coelis = 203. 1: Ge hlasfordes, doð ge eowrum monnum ǣet ilce he hira andefne & gemetgiað ǣone ǣrean; geðencað ǣet ægðer ge hira hlasford ge eower is on hefenum.—Other examples: Mat.² 5. 24, 9. 13, 10. 7; Ps. Th.² 17. 48; etc.

**II. Frequently by a Subordinated Finite Verb.**

Almost as frequently as by a co-ordinated finite verb the Latin appositive participle is translated by an Anglo-Saxon subordinated finite verb, introduced by a conjunction that indicates the relation sustained by the Latin participle to the principal verb. The dependent verb in Anglo-Saxon is more commonly in the indicative, though occasionally in the optative; while at times the form of the verb is ambiguous. The use of the indicative or the optative rests upon the well-known distinction between these two moods, but the principle is not infrequently ignored. I cite examples of each mood. In the main, the examples are arranged according to the use of the appositive participle in Latin:

1. **The Latin Temporal Clause** is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by a temporal conjunction or conjunctional phrase: usually by ða, ða ða, sonne; less frequently by æfter ðam ðe, æfter ðon ðæt, mid ðy, ðð ðæt, siðdan, sona swa, swa, swa swide swa, ða hwile ðe. Examples:

(1) **Indicative:**—ða: Mat.² 27. 24: Uidens autem pilatus ... lavit manus = Da geseah p.... ða ... he ðwoh his handa; ib. 8. 8; Bede² 91. 5 (112. 2), 91. 30 (112. 26); Greg.² 70. 23 (103. 11); Gen.² 28. 18, 30. 9; etc.; ða ða: Bede² 87. 4 (106. 24); Greg.² 136. 5 (181. 17); Gen.² 3. 8; etc.; sonne: Greg.² 8* (27. 17), 32. 15 (57. 2); Ps. Th.² 21. 11; Bened.² 152. 12 (85. 9); etc.; æfter ðam ðe: Greg.² 216. 23
(287. 9); a\after \son \swa\x: Bede\2 11. 25 (28. 7); mid \swy: Bede\2 84. 5 (102. 30); \swax:\ Greg\2 102. 23 (143. 17); si\swan\: Greg\2 78. 16 (113. 11), Bened\2 132. 18 (70. 9); \sona \swa\: Greg\2 32. 17 (57. 6); \swa \swi\swa\: Greg\2 68. 17 (99. 21); \swa \swi\swa\swf: Greg\2 344. 16 (421. 28.—(2), Optative: \sonne\: Bened\2 32. 11: Injuriam non facere, sed \factam\ patienter sufferre = 17. 11: ac \sonne\ him mon yfel do, he seal gedylidelice a\æfnian; Bede\2 83. 6 (100. 33); Greg\2 322. 10 (403. 14); Mat\2 6. 7; \swa \swa: Bened\2 202. 14 (131. 6); si\swan\: Bened\2 138. 14 (73. 9); \sona \swa\: Bened\2 138. 14 (73. 9); \swa\: Bened\2 158. 11 (91. 13).

Note.—The Latin Co-ordinate Participle, though normally translated into Anglo-Saxon by a co-ordinated finite verb (see above, p. 321), is sometimes translated by a subordinated finite verb, which clause is temporal. Thus in Greg\2 156. 3 (increpat, dicens = 207. 14 tælde, \swa \he \cwæ\d) we have as the translation of dicens the dependent \swa \he \cwæ\d instead of the more common independent and \he \cwæ\d (Greg\2 98. 16 (137. 16), etc.). I have noted about thirty examples of dicens = \swa \he \cwæ\d in Greg\2 and about forty examples of dicens = and \he \cwæ\d. Besides, the Anglo-Saxon dependent temporal clause is substituted for other co-ordinate participles of the Latin.

2. The Latin Relative Clause is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by a relative pronoun. Examples:—(1) Indicative: Bened\2 72. 14: Lectiones ad ipsum deum pertinentes dicantur = 39. 9: rædings syn gesungene, \swa\ to \sam \freolsdæge \belimpa\d; ib. 2. 6, 8 (1. 7, 9); Greg\2 18*\2 (37. 22); Bede\2 92. 8 (114. 6), 94. 28 (118. 12); Gen. 23. 17; Mat. 22. 11, 25. 29, 25. 34; Ps. Th\2 3. 6; etc., etc.—
(2) Optative: Bened\2 44. 8: Scurrilitates vero vel verba otiosa et risum moventia, a\eterna clausura in omnibus locis damnamus = 22. 5: gegafspæçe and idele word and \swa\ word, \swa leahter astyrien ... we ... forbeoda\d; Greg\2 126. 26 (173. 8); Bede\2 57. 17 (80. 25).
3. The Latin Causal Clause is rendered by a subordinated finite verb introduced by forðæm, forðæm &e, forðon, forðon &e, mid &y. Examples:—(1) Indicative: forðæm: Greg.² 50. 14: ad exemplum aliis constitutus = 77. 13: Forðæm he bið gesett to bisme oðrum monnum: Ps. Th. 18. 7;—forðon: Greg.² 52. 9 (79. 10); Bede² 6. 9 (2. 19); forðæm&e: Greg.² 210. 1 (276. 15 Cot.), ib. 232. 12 (305. 2); Bede² 116. 3 (142. 1); for &on &e: Bede² 309. 10 (432. 30); mid &y: Bede² 12. 13 (28. 18) (or Temporal?).

4. The Latin Conditional Clause is translated by a subordinate finite verb introduced by gif. Examples:—(1) Indicative: Greg.² 44. 6: Pupilla namqne oculi . . . albuginem tolerans nil videt = 69. 18: gif hine &one &et fleah mid calle ofergæð, &onne ne mæg he noht gesion; ib. 208. 25 (277. 8); Bede² 98. 8 (120. 22); Bened.² 86. 17 (46. 16), 96. 20 (52. 4); Mat.² 21. 22.—(2) Optative: Greg.² 22. 23: Cni nolenti in faciem mulier spuit = 45. 2: Gif hire &onne se widsace, &onne is cynn &et him spiwe &et wif on &et nebb.

5. The Latin Concessive Clause is turned by a subordinate finite verb introduced by &eah, &eah &e. Examples:—(1) Indicative: &eah: Greg.² 192. 3: non levabo caput, saturatus afflictione et miseria = 253. 8 . . . &eah ic eom gesyllæd mid broce & mid ierm&m. (2) Optative: &eah: Greg.² 34. 19: co-actus = 59. 10: &eah hiene mon niede; ib. 42. 18 (67. 23); Ps. Th.² 3. 5; &eah &e: Greg.² 68. 7 (99. 9), Bede² 57. 29 (82. 4), 272. 28 (368. 16).

6. The Latin Final Clause is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by to &æm &æt, to &y &æt, &æt, &e læs, &e læs &e, &ylæs. Examples:—(1) Indicative: I find no example.—(2) Optative: &æt: Mat.² 14. 15: dimitte turbas, ut euntes in castella emant sibi escas = forlæt &as mænægeo &æt hi faron . . . ï him mete biegean; Greg.² 122. 19 (167. 17); to &æm &æt: Greg.² 246. 20 (319. 20); to &y &æt: Bened.² 204. 15 (132. 15); &e læs: Mat.² 13. 29; &e læs &e: Gen.² 32. 11; &ylæs: Greg.² 90. 2, 4 (127. 14, 15).
7. The Latin Modal Clause is turned by a subordinate finite verb introduced by sua swa, swelce. Examples:—
(1) Indicative: suwa swa: Greg.2 348. 14: ut qui voluptatibus delectati discessimus, fretibus amaricati redeamus = 425. 14: swætte us biterige sio hrowsung, swa suwa us ær swetedon ða synna; Mat.2 9. 36; etc., etc.—(2) Optative: swelce: Greg.2 156. 6: quasi compatiens = 207. 17: swelce he efitne he him bære; ib. 80. 22 (117. 1); 94. 30 (135. 1); Bened.2 180. 6 (113. 25).

8. The Latin Consecutive Clause is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by suwa ðæt, ðæt, ðætte. Examples:—(1) Indicative: suwa ðæt: Mat.2 13. 2: congregete sunt ad eum turbæ multæ, ita ut in naviculam adscendens sedet = mycle mångeo wæron gesamnade to him suwa ðæt he eode on soyp ðæt; Bede2 278. 11, 12 (378. 20, 21); ðæt: Bede2 116. 4 (142. 2); Bened.2 188. 15 (124. 5); ðætte: Greg.2 182. 7 (241. 3).—(2) Optative: ðæt: Greg.2 34. 21: caveat ne acceptam pecuniam in sudarium ligans de ejus occultatione judicetur = 59. 13: healde hine ðæt he ne cnytte ðæt underfoingne fcoh on ðæm watline; ib. 38. 14 (63. 15), 398. 20 (463. 13); ðætte: Greg.2 164. 23 (219. 7); suwa ðæt: Bened.2 12. 4 (5. 24).

III. By a Prepositional Phrase.

Not infrequently the Latin appositive participle is translated into Anglo-Saxon by a prepositional phrase.
(1) The phrase denotes Manner, Means, or Instrumentality, and is introduced by mid, in, swyrh. Examples:—mid: Bened.2 52. 19: subsequuntur gaudentes et dicentes = 27. 11: ðus æfterfylgendlice mid blisse clypiað; ib. 104. 9: adjutus = 55. 16: mid heora fullume; Greg.2 274. 1: iratus = 353. 20: mid his ierre; in: Bede2 239. 18: Cristus incarnatus = 310. 26: Crist in menniscum lichoman; swyrh: Bened.2 178. 15: admonitus = 113. 13: swyrh myngunge.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 327

(2) The phrase denotes Time, and is introduced by after, be, on, under. Examples:—after: Bede 110. 23: eidem perempto = 132. 14: after his siege; on: Bened. 88. 12: dormientes = 47. 11: on slepe; Greg. 218. 15 = 289. 10; under: Bede 114. 26: albati = 140. 4: under crisman (or Modal?).

(3) The phrase denotes Cause, and is introduced by for. Examples:—Bened. 96. 20: excommunicatus = 52. 5: for amansunge; Greg. 28. 12 (51. 14); Greg. 68. 18: miseratus = 99. 22: for mildheortnesse; Greg. 124. 5: superne formidinis et dilectionis spiritu afflatus = 169. 3: for Godes lufum for Godes ege; Bede 32. 30: fame confecti = 54. 2: for hungre; Gen. 19. 29: Deus recordatus Abrahame liberavit Lot = alsde L. for Abrahame; Gen. 45. 3: nimio terrore perterriti = for ege.

(4) The phrase denotes Condition and is introduced by butan. Examples:—Mat. 22. 25: non habens semen = butan bearne.

IV. BY A VERB IN THE INFINITIVE MOOD.

Occasionally the Latin appositive participle is translated by an infinitive. Examples:—(1) The Uninflected Infinitive: (a) Without a subject: Bened. 10. 13: Et si fugientes gehennae poenas ad vitam volumus pervenire perpetuum = 5. 5: And gif he hellewites susla forbugan willa’s and to ecum life cuman; Bede 99. 25: uerbis delectatus promisit = 122. 33: Sa ongon he lustfullian ses bishops wordum and gehelte; etc.; (b) With a subject: Bede 46. 5: ad iussionem regis residentes .. predicarent = 58. 28: Da het se cyning hie sittan .. and hie .. bodedon; Mat. 27. 26.—(2) The Inflected Infinitive: Greg. 178. 25: ita nonnunquam quibusdam audita vera noceurunt = 237. 11: sua dere’s eac hwilum sumum monnum sæt so’s to gehierenne; Greg. 300. 15: ut cum .. tunc quasi a nobismetipis foras etiam alios instruentes eexamus = 385. 9: Ac eft sonne .. sonne bio we of sære ceastre ut aifere, sæt is of urum agnum ingedonce, odre
men to læranne; Bede² 8. 10: omnes ad quos hæc eadem historia peruenire poterit ... legentes siue audientes suppliciter precor, ut = 486. 8: ic eaæmodlice bidde ... sætte to eallum ðe ðis ylee stær to becyme ... to rædanne oððe to gehyranne sæt, etc.; Bede² 54. 24: si ... actura gratias intrat = 76. 12: ðeah ðe heo ... Gode Soncunge to donne ... gange; Ps. Th.² 9. 12.

V. BY AN ATTRIBUTIVE PARTICIPLE.

The Latin appositive participle is at times translated by an Anglo-Saxon attributive participle. Examples:—Bened.² 24. 13: ut non solum detrimenta gregis sibi commissi non patiatur = 14. 8: sæt he him ðæs befæsten eowdes nanne æfwird-lan næbbe; ib. 92. 14 (49. 18), 146. 11 (78. 10); Greg.² 22. 12 (43. 14), 126. 7 (171. 11); Mat. 17. 14.

VI. BY AN ABSOLUTE PARTICIPLE.

Rarely the Latin appositive participle is translated by an Anglo-Saxon absolute participle. Examples:—Mat.² 13. 1: In illo die exiens Jesus de domo, sedebat secus mare = On ðam dæge ðam hælende ut-gangendum of huse he sæt wið ða sæ; Mk.² 5. 2, 16. 12; Mat.² 17. 14; Lk.² 1. 63, 17. 7; Oros.³ 33. 29 (34. 1). (See Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., pp. 8, 13.)

VII. BY AN ADVERB.

Occasionally the Latin appositive participle is turned by an adverb. Examples:—Greg.² 360. 18: Hinc iterum iratus dicit = 435. 11: he cwæð eft ierrenge; Greg.² 402. 18, 21: cautus ... sollicitus = 467. 1, 3: værlice ... geornlice; Ps. Th.² 16. 10: projicientes = forsewenlice.

VIII. BY AN ADJECTIVE.

The Latin appositive participle is at times translated by an Anglo-Saxon adjective. Examples:—Bede² 108. 32: scio ...
quae uentura tibi in proximo mala formidas = 128. 25: ic wat . . . hwyle towerd yfel ðu ðe in neahnesse forhtast; Bede² 82. 5: adlatus est quidam . . . oculorum luce privatus = 100. 3: ða lædde mon forð sumne blindne mon; Mat.² 8. 16: multos daemonia habentes = manege deofol-seoce.

IX. By a Substantive.

Rarely a Latin appositive participle is represented in Anglo-Saxon by a substantive. Examples:—Bened.² 116. 7: Mensis fratrum edentium lectio deesse non debet = 62. 3: Gebroðra gereorde æt hyra mysum ne sceal beon butan rædinge; Greg.² 160. 16, 17: Egit . . . doctor, ut prius audirent laudati, quod recognoscerent, et postmodum, quod exhortati sequerentur = 213. 20. 21: Sua gedyde se . . . lareow sæt hie æresð gehierdon sæ heringe ðe him licode forðem sæt hie æfter sæm sæ lusðlicor gehierden sæ lare.
CHAPTER V.

THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN THE OTHER GERMANIC LANGUAGES.

I.

In the main, the uses of the appositive participle in the other Germanic Languages tally with those found in Anglo-Saxon. My discussion must be brief not only because of the want of space but also because of the lack of a comprehensive treatment of the appositive participle in these languages. But the treatises of Douse and of Gering answer admirably for Gothic; those of Falk and Torp, of Lund, and of Nygaard for the Scandinavian languages; those of Dietz, O. Erdmann, K. Förster, Mourek, Rannow, Seedorf, Seiler, and Wunderlich, for Old High German; that of Barz for Middle High German; and those of Behaghel and Pratje for Old Saxon. Mourek, Pratje, and Rannow do not classify their examples according to use. Perhaps it is not improper to state that, while this chapter is based on the statistics of others, the interpretation thereof is my own.

1. Gothic.

In the Introduction I have already commented on the unwisdom of Gering's excluding the adjectival (relative) participle from the appositive use. Ignoring this, we find the appositive participle freely used adjectivally, adverbially, and co-ordinately (though Gering does not use the last term). As Lücke has shown with reference to the absolute participle, so it is with the appositive participle: Ulfilas was a slavish translator; and his usage represents, I believe, the genius
of the classical (especially Greek) and not of the Germanic languages (see II. below). But at times even Ulfilas turns the Greek appositive participle by a finite verb, Gering (p. 313 ff., 399 ff.) giving not a few examples of the same (over fifty subordinate and twenty-five co-ordinate verbs); whereas the turning of a Greek finite verb by a Gothic appositive participle is very rare (four* examples, according to Gering, p. 401).

I append a few examples from Gering: I. Adjectival (Relative) (Gering's attributive): Mat. 8. 9: Jah auk ik manna im habands uf waldufnja meinamma gadrauhtins = Kal γάρ ἐγώ ἀνθρωπός εἰμι... ἔχων ὑπ' ἑμαυτῶν στρατιώτας; L. 2. 13: managei harjis himinakundis, hazjandane gup jah gjandane = Πάντας στρατιάς οὐρανίου αἰνοῶν τὸν θεόν καὶ λεγόντων; II. Adverbial: Mat. 27. 63: qaf nauth libands = εἶπεν ἄτι ζῶν (temporal); Mk. 6. 20: Herodis ohta sis Iohannen, kunnands ina wair garaihtana jah weihana = Ἡρώδης ἔφοβετο τὸν Ἰωάννην, εἰδὼς αὐτὸν ἄνδρα δίκαιον καὶ ἁγίον (causal); J. 6. 6: ἤπαθ Ἰαν qaf fraisands ina = Τούτο δὲ ἔλεγεν πειράζον αὐτόν (final); Mat. 6. 17: ἢ ἣν fastands salbo haubij pein = Σὺ δὲ νηστεύων ἀλειψάι σου τὴν κεφαλὴν (conditional according to Gering, but may be temporal); Lk. 2. 48: sa atta peins jah ik weinnandona sokidedum ἰπκ = ὁ Πατὴρ σου καγώ ὅδυνώμενοι ἐξητοῦμεν σε (modal: manner); Mk. 6. 5: siukaim handuns galajands gahailida = ἀρρώστοις ἐπιτείς τὰς χείρας ἑθεράπευσον (modal: means, Gering's instrumental); J. 7. 15: hwaiwa sa bokos kann unusaisifs? = Πῶς οὕτος γράμματα ὄδην μὴ μεμαθηκὼς (concessive, Gering's limitative); III. Co-ordinate (not treated by Gering as such): Mat. 6. 31: Ni maurnaij nu gjandanes = Μη ὀν περιμνήσετε λέγοντες; Mk. 9. 12: ἢ ἔσται andhafjands qaf du im = ὁ δὲ ἀποκριθεῖς εἶπεν αὐτοῖς.

*But since, in making this statement, Gering limits himself to the adverbial uses of the appositive participle, there must be more than four examples in all. I have myself found about this number in Mark.
According to the statements of Lund, of Falk and Torp, and of Nygaard, the appositive participle has had the same history in the Scandinavian languages as in Anglo-Saxon.

As Lund’s *Oldnordisk Ordføjningslære* is out of print, it is best, perhaps, to quote in full what he has to say of the appositive use of the participle in Old Norse, together with his examples (§ 149): “Tillægsformerne, især den handlende, føjes (som hosstillet) til et navneord i sætningen for at betegne en med hovedhandlingen samtidig (eller fortidig) handling eller tilstand, der står således i forbindelse med hovedhandlingen, at den ikke alene kan bestemme dens tidsforhold, men også dens måde og andre omstændigheder, som grund, anledning, betingelse, modsætning osv., hvilke forhold almindelig ellers (som på Dansk) udtrykkes ved bisætninger (med bindeord eller henførende udtryk) eller ved en forholdsordsforbindelse. Skønt denne brug ikke er meget almindelig (som i Græsk og Latin), tjener den dog ikke sjælden til at give talen korthed og bøjelighed, da tillægsformerne på denne måde kunne føjes ikke alene til sætningens grundord, men også til genstanden, hensynet og andre led deri.” Then follow his examples:

Hlæjandi Völundr høfsk at lofti, grátandi Böðvildr gekk ór eyju. *Völundarkv.* 27.—(Hann) hafði tekt lax ór forsum ok át blundandi. *Sn. Edd.* 72.—Ór hans síðu sofanda tók guð eitt rif ok fylldi rúm rífsins með holði. *Gisl.* 44, 66.—Sá sem norrœnæði, kennandi sinn fátækdóm ok vanfærí tók þetta verk upp á sik af boðskap ok forsögu fyrri sagðs virðuligs herra. *Skjörn* 2.—Sá er kaupir vís vitandi (*sciens, med sit vidende, således at han ved*) *Grág.* 1, 15.—Hón drottningin þetta sjandi (hóc videns, ved at se dette) fylldist spáleiksanda ok mælti svá. *Biskupa S.* 217.—At fengnum andsvörum spurðra luta ok oftraðu miklu fè. *Alex.* 51.—Drukkju jarlar

*For the loan of this book I am indebted to Professor James Morgan Hart, who also kindly called my attention to the work of Falk and Torp.*
In their recent work, *Dansk-Norskens Syntax i Historisk Fremsstilling*, Falk and Torp briefly treat the appositive use of the participle not only in Old Norse but also in the modern Scandinavian languages. Their statement is an admirable supplement to that of Lund, and is worthy of quotation (§ 67. 3): “Apposition af participier forholder sig væsentlig som adjectiverne. Ved præsens particip forekommer appositiv brug i oldnorsk kun i lærde stil: *hon misgørâi etandi af tressins ñævesti; talâi ñ pâ fyrrî sinun nppnun svâ målandi*. Endnu er udtryk som: jeg gik igang med arbeidet stolende paa hans løfte; trodsende alle hindringer trængte han frem, fremmede før den ægte folkelige udtryksmaade. Den ældre kancellistil yndede saadanne vendinger: paa eet andhet stedt talindis om bandt siger han saa (P. Elies.); T. gick vd emod dennem berendis hostiam (Abs. Ped.); andre breffue lydendis at (St. D. Pr.); jeg befalier dig Gud ønskendis dig ald lyksalighed (Pont.); befalendiss dig hermed gud og himmelen (Chr. VI.). Ved fortidsparticip findes appositiv brug i oldnorsk klassisk prosa kun i et parentle udtryk: *pâ lâgu ñar fyrrî Danir komnir ër leiðangri*. I lærde skrifter forekommer ogsaa foranstillet apposition: *utgenginn af skóla heldr hann sik nú upp á leikmannna hátt; ër sînu valdi kastadr dö hann i myrkvastofu*. Endnu er forbindelser som: forladt af alle døde han i ensomhed; opbragt herover pønsede han paa høvn, ganske uhjemlighede og fremmede før godt landsmaal. Uden anstød er derimod den efterstillede apposition i udtryk som: Gud sendte sín søn, født af en kvinde; til en by, kaldet Ephrem. I den ældre kunstige stil paastræffes vendinger som: rigdom ther ijlde brughet giffuer orsage till alwerdsins homot (P. Elies.); aalije, ther mange menneskir smwrde met worde karscke (ib.). Sml. § 139, 1.” The section cited runs: 13
MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.

"Appositivt particip til betegnelse af den en hovedsætning underordnede handling, erstattende en relativ, tids- eller aarsagssætning, er i det hele og store en fremmed brug i nordisk: se § 67, 3. I vort skriftsprog er denne udtryksmaade ikke sjelden: han gik bort, pønsende paa hævn; ankommen til byen, gik han straks ned til havnen. I dagligtalene anvedes den aldrig. Anderledes hvor participiet betegner subjektets tilstand under handlingen. Her fungerer det som adjektiv, idet dette kan anvendes paa samme maade: Guðrún grátandi gekk òr túní; han gik slagen derfra (sml. han gik glad bort); se § 68, 2 b."

Nyggaard considers that the use of the participle in Norse prose is largely due to Latin influence. As I have not had access to his article on Den Lærde Stil i den Nørøne Prosa, I quote the summary of the Berlin Jahresbericht for 1896: "Der geleherte stil zeigt sich in der nordischen prosa: 1. in der erweiterung des gebrauchs des part. præsens, das in volkstümlichen stile nicht allzu häufiig angewendet wird. Auf dem gebrauch dieses part. hat im geleherten stil das lat. part. præsens und das gerundium eingewirkt. 2. Auch der gebrauch des part. præt. ist in dem geleherten stil wesentlich erweitert. Namentlich wird das part. præt. häufiig mit prépositionen (at, eptir) verbunden; wir haben hier eine konstruktion, die dem lat. abl. absol. entspricht."

3. High German.

(1) Old High German.

I have been surprised to find how closely the uses of the appositive participle in Old High German correspond to those in Anglo-Saxon. True, Tatian has no Anglo-Saxon counter-part, for he is as slavish in following his original as is Ulfilas; and has hundreds of examples of the un-Germanic co-ordinate participle. But the more original Otfrid and Isidor are quite different. In Otfrid and Notker the modal participle was
so common that it developed an adverbial ending in -o (O. Erdmann, Syntax der Sprache Otfrids, p. 219), as in Otfrid, iv., 12. 53: er fuor ilonto; v., 9. 14: ir get sus drurento. The modal use is found, too, in Isidor. In Isidor and in Otfrid, again, the adjectival use of the preterite participle is common, while that of the present is comparatively rare, being limited as in Anglo-Saxon to participles with slight verbal power. The other uses are rare in both writers. Isidor, for instance, has only four examples of the co-ordinate participle, all from quedan; two are in direct translation of the Latin dicens, and we may add also the other two, though dicens does not occur in these two passages. But eighteen times Isidor translated a Latin co-ordinate participle by a finite verb (nine co-ordinated and nine subordinated). Clearly, then, if Isidor and Otfrid are true types, the co-ordinate participle was as unnatural in Old High German as in Anglo-Saxon. In the Benediktinerregel, finally, the present participle often answers to a Latin gerund in the ablative (Seiler, p. 470).

Examples: (1) Adjectival (Relative):—Tatian, 88. 2: Uuas sum man dar drizog inti ahto iar habenti in sinero unmahti = Erat autem quidam homo ibi trriginta octo annum habens in infirmitate sua; Otfrid, iii., 20: 1: gisah einan man, blintan giboranan; Tatian, 107. 1: Inti uuas sum arm betalari gimen-nit Lazarus = Et erat quidam mendicus nomine Lazarus; (2) Adverbial:—Otfrid, 1., 17. 73: 'sie wurtun slafente fon engilon gimanote (temporal); Tatian, 192. 2: Inti andeur managu bismaronti quadun in inan = Et alia multa blasphemantes dice-bant in eum (modal: manner); Tatian, 12. 3: inti inan ni findowe fuorun uuidar zi Hierusalem inan suochenti (causal and final); Otfrid, v., 12. 26: er ingiang ungimerrit, duron so bisperrit (concessive); Otfrid, 1., 8. 6: thiu racha, sus gidan, nam thes huares thana wan (conditional); (3) Co-ordinate:—Otfrid, 1., 13. 18: barg thiu wort, in herzen ahtonti; Tatian, 6. 6: Maria uuarlihho ghielt allu thisiu uuort ahtonti in ira herzen = M. autem conservabat omnia verba haec conferens in corde suo; Tatian, 54. 6: antvvurtenti quad zi in = re-
spondens dixit ad illos; Tatian, 81. 2: sprah in quedenti = locutus est eis dicens.

(2) Middle High German.

The story is the same in Middle High German, if we may take Barz’s* statistics of the Nibelungenlied and Iwein as true for Middle High German in general. Here the adverbial participle denoting manner is very common, and we meet with sorgende, swigende, unwizzende, etc., as in Anglo-Saxon. But the adverbial participle denoting means is practically unknown, and the other uses of the adverbial appositive participle are rare. Those cited as temporal and as final occur in close connection with verbs of motion, and waver between predicative and adverbial uses. The adjectival (relative) use is almost exclusively confined to the preterite participle. The co-ordinate use is not known.

Examples from Barz:—(1) Adjectival (Relative): Nib. 2. 3: ein vil edel magedin, daz . . . sin, Kriemhilt geheizen; Nib. 833. 2: die truogen liehte pfelle . . ., geworht in Arabin; (2) Adverbial: Nib. 1065. 1: vil lute seriende daz liut gie mit im dan (temporal); Nib. 2333. 3: ez giengen iuwer helde zuo disem gademe gewafent wol ze vlize (temporal); Nib. 502. 3: sorgende † walte er (modal: manner); Iw. 3227: er stal sich swigende † dan (modal); Iw. 6113: daz ist unwizzende † geschehen (modal); Iw. 531: daz ich suochende rite einen man (final); ib. Iw. 4163, 5775.

(3) New High German.

The fullest recent treatment accessible to me of the appositive participle in New High German is that by von Jagemann in his Elements of German Syntax; of which this section of

*Paul does not treat the construction.
† Barz (p. 22) puts this under Adverbialer Gebrauch des Participiums, not Appositiver Gebrauch.
my paper is scarcely more than a summary. In § 124, 4a, he gives the three following examples of the appositive participle in New High German: “She sat weeping by the bedside of her mother = Sie sass weinend am Bette ihrer mutter; He entered the room in silence = Schweigend trat er in das Zimmer; Pierced by an arrow he sank to the ground = Von einem Pfeile getroffen sank er zu Boden.” To me, however, the participle in the first example appears to be used predicatively. The remaining two are appositive, the former denoting manner and the latter cause. In § 125, notwithstanding, we are told: “Present participles should not be used in German* to express adverbial relations of time, cause, or manner.”* I do not know how to reconcile the italicized part of this statement with example two above, unless for the moment Professor von Jagemann had in mind the statement made in § 124, 3c: “A limited number of present participles are no longer felt as such, but as common adjectives, and they may therefore be used predicatively and adverbially*: He is absent = Er ist abwesend; She sang charmingly = Sie sang reizend;” and thought that he had put Schweigend trat er in das Zimmer under § 124, 3c instead of § 124, 4a. Be this as it may, his statement that the present participle may be used adverbially is in strict keeping with the tradition not only of High German, but also of the Germanic languages in general, so far as it is used to denote manner. The non-use of the present participle to denote time and cause is what our preceding investigation has led us to expect.

Again, we learn that the “adjectival” use of the present appositive participle is not allowed (§ 124, 4b): “This [i. e., the appositive] use of a participle, however, is not permitted in the numerous cases in which an important limitation of a noun is to be expressed. The participle should then be used attributively, before the noun, preceded by its own qualifiers

*The italics are mine.
(see § 231, 2); or else a relative clause should be substituted:
The book lying on the table was a Greek Grammar = Das
auf dem Tische liegende Buch war eine griechische Grammatik,
or Das Buch, das auf dem Tische lag etc.; The candidate
receiving the largest number of votes is elected = Der die
meisten Stimmen erhaltende Candidat (or derjenige Candidat,
welcher die meisten Stimmen erhält,) ist erwählt; I prefer
an edition of Molière's works printed in France = Ich ziehe
eine in Frankreich gedruckte Ausgabe von Molière's Werken
(or eine Ausgabe von ... die in Frankreich gedruckt ist,) vor."

Finally, we are told that the "co-ordinate" use of the
present participle is not common* (§ 124, 4c): "A present
participle should not, ordinarily, be used to express an idea
as important as, or more important than, that expressed by
the finite verb, but a co-ordinate verb should be used instead
of the participle: He sat at his desk all day, writing letters
= Er sass den ganzen Tag an seinem Pulte und schrieb
Briefe; He stood on the mountain, looking down into the
valley = Er stand auf dem Berge und sah ins Thal hinunter."
This usage is in strict accord with that of Early West Saxon.

No specific statement is made as to the governing power
of the present participle when used appositively. But, from
§ 124. 4b & c above quoted, we learn that the present appos-
tive participle seldom governs an object in New High German,
the participle with an object usually being attributive.

As to the past participle, von Jagemann has this to say
(§ 126): "Although past participles are more frequently used
in German to express adverbial relations than present parti-
ciples, yet they cannot be used with the same freedom as in
English, and it will often seem best to make substitutions for
them similar to those just indicated for present participles."

4. Old Saxon.

In Old Saxon (cf. Behaghel, and Pratje, §§ 156, 159) we
again meet with the adverbial participle denoting manner
(sorgondi, gornondi, greotandi, etc.), but not means. The only instances of the temporal participle are with slapandi and libbiandi. The other adverbial uses are unrepresented (cf. Behaghel, § 300). The adjectival (relative) use is commoner with the preterite than with the present. The co-ordinate participle is unknown; for the participles cited by Behaghel in § 300, B., are either predicative or modal.

Examples (all from the Heliand as given by Pratje):—(1) Adjectival (relative): 3391: huo ik hier brinnandi thrauerc tholon; 2776: that man iro Johannes ... hobid gavi alosit fan is lichamen; (2) Adverbial: Temporal: 1013: that gi so libbeandi thena landes uuuard selvon gisahon; 701: sagda im an suefna slapandion on naht;—modal: 4588: thuo bigan thero erlo gihuic te oþremo ... sorgondi gisahan; 4071: griot gornondi; 2996: gruotta ina greotandi; etc. Pratje (§ 155. 2) considers uuillandi an adverb in 1965: thoh hie ... manno huilicon uuillandi forgeve uuateres drincan.

II.

Despite the professed incompleteness of the preceding presentation of the uses of the appositive participle in the Germanic languages exclusive of English, I believe it warrants us in drawing certain general conclusions concerning the origin of the appositive participle in the Germanic languages, as follows:—

1. The adverbial participle denoting manner and the adjectival (relative) past participle are most probably native to the Germanic languages. Perhaps, too, the adjectival and the temporal uses with words like be, live, and sleep are native.

2. All other uses of the appositive participle, whether present or past, are probably of Greek or Latin origin.

3. That the appositive use of the present participle having an object is derived from the Greek and the Latin is highly probable. True, the appositive participle in Ulfilas and in Tatian governs an object with extraordinary frequency; but
I believe that a comparison of the examples with the originals would show that in almost every case the construction is in direct imitation of the Greek and the Latin. Neither Gering nor Mourek cites all the examples of the participle with an object; Mourek does not give the Latin original along with the Old High German; and I have not made an exhaustive comparison in either case. But the slight study I have given forces me to the above conclusion. I find, for instance, that out of 151 present participles with a direct object in the Gothic Mark 139 correspond to Greek participles with objects; and that in most of the twelve exceptional cases the participle translates a Greek participle elsewhere in Mark. Mourek cites 140 examples of quedenti in Tatian; and, on turning to the Latin, I find that in 137 of these instances the Old High German participle is a direct translation of dicens. More than this, not a few of the Greek participles with an object that are cited by Gering (pp. 313 ff., 399 ff.) are turned by a finite verb, whereas the whole number of Greek verbs turned by Gothic participles is very small. In the more original Old High German texts, a present participle with an object is almost unknown. Of the appositive participles (present) cited from Otfrid by Erdmann only three have an object (singenti, i. 12. 22; hel-senti, i. 11. 46; èrnenti, i. 5. 50). With the present appositive participles cited from Isidor by Rannow, an object occurs only four times, each time the participle of the verb quedan; in two of these instances in direct translation of the Latin dicens, and in the other two without any corresponding participle in the Latin. More than this, eighteen times Isidor translated a Latin participle having an object by a finite verb (co-ordinated nine and subordinated nine), nine of these being forms of dicens.—In Middle High German, too, an object is seldom found. Barz cites only three examples from Iwein and the Nibelungenlied (Nib. 2292: gie Wolfhart . . . houwendie die Guntheres man; Iw. 531: daz ich suochede rite einen man; Iw. 4163: die reit ich suochede), and these are in connection
with a verb of motion, and waver between the predicative and the appositive use.—The comparative infrequency of the present participle with an object in New High German is known to all.—As for Old Saxon, not one of the genuine appositive participles cited by Pratje has an object.

III.

The other Germanic languages employed about the same substitutes for the Greek and Latin appositive participle as did Anglo-Saxon; hence this topic may be treated with great brevity.

1. The Co-ordinated Finite Verb.

Of the co-ordinated finite verb, Gering (p. 399 f.) cites about twenty-five examples from Ulfilas, such as Mk. 5. 41: κρατήσας τῆς χειρὸς τοῦ παιδίου λέγει = fairgraip bi handan pata barn qapuh; J. 18. 22: ἔδοκεν ἡπίσημα . . . εὐτῶν = gaf slah . . . qapuh; etc.—This translation is common in Old High German, also, ten examples occurring in Isidor (Rannow, p. 99 f.): 39. 26: etiam locus ipse coruscans miraculīs . . . ad se omnem contrahat mundum = ioh auh dhiu selba stat chischeinit . . . ioh zi imu chidhinsit allan mittingart; 4. 33: respondens . . . ait = antuurtα . . . quad; etc.

2. The Subordinated Finite Verb.

For the dependent clause as a translation of the Greek and Latin appositive participle in the other Germanic languages, see Gering, p. 395 ff.; Rannow, p. 100.

As to Gothic, Gering gives but two or three examples of this locution in his treatment of the appositive participle (J. 13. 30: λαβων . . . ἐξηλθεν = bipe andnam pana hlaib jains, suns galaip ut; Philip. 1. 27); but, as already stated, Gering limits the term appositive to the “adverbial” uses of the participle, and excludes therefrom the “adjectival,” unwisely considering all the latter “attributive.” Many of his attributive parti-
ciples are, according to our definition, appositive; and in not a few of these examples, as Gering states (p. 313), the Greek participle is translated by a Gothic subordinated finite verb introduced by a relative pronoun, as in: Mat. 6. 4, 6. 18: ὁ πατὴρ σου ὁ βλέπων ἐν τῷ κρυπτῷ — atta ἰεῖν saei sālwif in fullhnsja; Eph. 1. 3: θεὸς . . . ὁ εὐλογήσας ἡμᾶς — guf . . . izei ga̱i̱u̱̱ida uns; etc., etc. (about fifty examples in all). Moreover, as Gering tells us (p. 317 ff.), the Greek substantivized participle is often turned by a Gothic dependent clause. In reality, then, the translation of a Greek appositive participle (especially in its adjectival use) by a subordinated finite verb is very common in Gothic.

In Old High German, also, the dependent finite verb often translates a Latin appositive participle. Rannow (p. 100) cites ten examples from Isidor; of which I quote two only: 19. 14: secundum Moysi sententiam dicentis = after Moyses quhidim, dhar ir quhad; 21. 16: sed semetipsum exinanivit formam servi accipiens = oh ir sih selbun aridalida, dhuo ir scalches chillihnissa infene.

3. The Prepositional Phrase.

Rannow (p. 102) cites one instance of this construction in Isidor: 19. 26: incarnatus et homo factus est = in fleisches liikheman uuardh uuordan; which should be compared with Bede ò 239. 18: Cristus incarnatus = 310. 26: in menniscum lichoman.

4. The Infinitive.

Gering (p. 397) cites one example from the Gothic: Mk. 10. 46: ἐκάθητο παρὰ τῇν ὄδὸν προσαυτῶν = sat faur wig du aihtron, but the Greek participle here is better considered predicative.

5. The Adverb.

Four examples of this locution occur in Gothic (Gering, p. 306): 2 Cor. 13. 2, 10: ἀπὸν γράφω = ai̱̱a̱̱̱̱̱̱ pro melja; Phil. 1. 25, 27.
6. The Adjective.

This substitution is very common in Gothic (Gering, p. 301 f.): Mk. 6. 9: ύποδειγμένος = gaskohs; etc., etc.—Six examples occur in Isidor (Rannow, p. 102): 33. 5: mente caecati = muotes blinde; etc.

7. The Substantive.

This construction occurs in Gothic (Gering, p. 303) and in Old High German (Rannow, p. 102). Examples:—(a) Gothic: Mat. 8. 16: προσήνεγκαν ἀντίθε δαίμονιζομένους πολλούς = atberun du imma daimonarjans managans; etc.;—(b) Old High German: Isidor, 21. 30: dominus numeravit scribens populos = druhtin saghida dhazs chiserip dhero folcho (see Rannow’s footnote on this sentence).
CHAPTER VI.

THE ANGLO-SAXON APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE AS A NORM OF STYLE.

In my dissertation on The Absolute Participle in Anglo-Saxon a chapter is given to "The Absolute Participle as a Norm of Style," which is based on Professor Gildersleeve's essay "On the Stylistic Effect of the Greek Participle." In that chapter is discussed the stylistic effect not only of the absolute participle, but also, incidentally, of the appositive participle. I need not, therefore, detail here the theory there laid down, the more so that nothing has occurred to make me change the view then expressed. Since, however, this study may come into the hands of some to whom the earlier paper is not accessible, I shall briefly state the theory there given, and add such comments and illustrations as may seem called for by the present detailed investigation of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon.

The theory as to the stylistic effect of the absolute participle in Anglo-Saxon was summarized in these words (p. 52): "The stylistic effect of the absolute participle in Anglo-Saxon was much the same as in the classical languages: it gave movement to the sentence; it made possible flexibility and compactness. But, owing to the artificial position of the absolute construction in Anglo-Saxon, its stylistic value was reduced to a minimum, was indeed scarcely felt at all. The absolute participle rejected as an instrument of style, the Anglo-Saxon had no adequate substitute therefor. The two commonest substitutes, the dependent sentence and the co-ordinate clause, as used in Anglo-Saxon, became unwieldy and monotonous. Brevity and compactness were impossible; the sentence was slow in movement and somewhat cumber-
some. The language stood in sore need of a more flexible instrument for the notation of subordinate conceptions, of such an instrument as the absolute dative seemed capable of becoming but never became.”

In the light of the foregoing history of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon, does this theory as to the stylistic effect of the absolute participle apply likewise to the appositive participle? Was the appositive participle as artificial a construction as the absolute participle? or was it more or less naturalized, if not native, in Anglo-Saxon?

Undoubtedly the stylistic effect of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon is to give the sentence movement, flexibility, and compactness; and it does this to a somewhat greater degree, I think, than could an equal number of absolute participles. To test this statement one need only compare a half dozen pages of Alfred, in which, as we have seen, the appositive participle (especially in certain uses) is rare, with the same number of Ælfric’s, which are strewn therewith. The slowness and the clumsiness of the former are not more patent than the rapidity, the flexibility, and the grace of the latter. Space does not allow quotations, nor are they necessary.

But the above statement is with reference to the appositive participle as a whole, whereas in Anglo-Saxon, as we have learned, the appositive participle has three sharply differentiated uses. Let us look at each for a moment by itself.

In its adjectival use, the appositive participle contributes not only to rapidity and flexibility but also to picturesqueness. The two former effects were attained in both prose and poetry; the last, as a rule, in poetry only; and all three to a greater or less degree in all stages of the Anglo-Saxon period, at least so far as the preterite participle was concerned. For the adjectival use of the present participle the Anglo-Saxon went to the Latin, though not until the Late West Saxon period. What a boon this borrowing was is clearly revealed by a comparison of Alfred with Ælfric or with the Gospels; or, to give a more modern illustration, by comparing modern English with New High German, as,
for instance, in the examples quoted from von Jagemann in chapter v.

Of the adverbial uses, the Anglo-Saxon at the outset wielded with skill only that denoting manner, as in *swigende cwæð*, etc. How poor he was as compared with us may be readily realized if we suppose the modern Englishman deprived, as is the modern German, of the ability to express means, time, cause, concession, etc., by the appositive participle. That was the situation of the Early West Saxon; but, thanks to Ælfric and the translators of the Gospels, Anglo-Saxon borrowed from the Latin what was so sadly needed; and Ælfric’s pages run as smoothly as do those of a modern Englishman. The fact, however, that these newly introduced uses of the adverbial appositive participle are so rare in the latter part of the Chronicle and in Wulfstan, leaves it doubtful whether the wisdom of Ælfric’s adoption received as immediate recognition as it deserved; though the non-use in the former may be due to the fact that it professes to be merely a bald record of facts. It seems probable, nevertheless, that these uses did not become normal for English until after the close of the Anglo-Saxon period, largely perhaps through the Anglo-Saxon and Middle English translations of the Bible, supplemented by French influence.

The Anglo-Saxon stood in greater need, I think, of the co-ordinate participle than of the adverbial (exclusive of that denoting manner); and Alfred’s persistent refusal to use it accounts in a large measure for the monotony of his style. Again Ælfric and the translators of the Gospels, discerning the need, borrowed from the Latin, this time the co-ordinate participle, and thereby gave to English a construction that, judged from the standpoint of style, was of immense value. Here, also, the difference between Alfred and Ælfric is the difference between modern English and modern German, happily illustrated in the examples cited from von Jagemann above (chapter v). A third time Ælfric’s lead was coldly followed by his immediate successors (Wulfstan and the author(s) of the later Chronicle),
and the construction hardly became fixed until the Middle English period, again through the help of the biblical translations. The foregoing applies chiefly to the present participle; the preterite participle, being inherently unsuited to the co-ordinate use, is as rare in Ælfric as in modern English.

The chief shortcoming, however, of the Anglo-Saxon appositive participle was, I take it, that in no one of the three uses did the present participle originally have the power of governing an object in construction. The introduction of this use, from the Latin, by Ælfric and the Late West Saxon translators constitutes, to my mind, their chief contribution to English style; for, with the possible exception of the infinitive and the modern gerund, no single construction has contributed so much to the compactness and the flexibility of the modern English sentence. Here, too, the innovation was tardily accepted, being seldom resorted to by Wulfstan or by the author of the Peterborough Chronicle. The general adoption of the construction in English was largely due to the influence of the biblical translations. Finally, the difference between Alfred and Ælfric is once more paralleled in that between modern English and modern German.

The Anglo-Saxon substitutes for the appositive participle call for only brief comment. The most frequent substitute, the co-ordinated finite verb, does well enough for the co-ordinate participle, but for no other, since it ignores shades of meaning. The next most common, the subordinated finite verb, is ill fitted to take the place of the co-ordinate participle, since it unduly subordinates the idea of the participle to that of the principal verb; but it is an excellent substitute for the adjectival and the adverbial participle, and is often so used not only in Anglo-Saxon but also in modern English and in the other Germanic languages. Undoubtedly, however, the appositive participle is a more flexible instrument for the denotation of subordinate ideas than is the dependent finite verb; witness the difference in this regard between modern English and modern German.
CHAPTER VII.

RESULTS.

The following are in brief the results that I believe to be established by this investigation:—

1. In Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle occurs oftenest in the nominative case, occasionally in the accusative and the dative, rarely in the genitive.

2. In Anglo-Saxon, especially in Late West Saxon and in the poems, the appositive participle is often not inflected, much oftener indeed than has hitherto been supposed. For details see p. 150 ff.

3. When inflected, the appositive participle almost invariably follows the strong declension.

4. As a rule, the appositive participle follows its principal, though occasionally (about 100 times in all) it precedes.

5. The uses of the appositive participle are three-fold:—
   (1) Adjectival, in which the participle is equivalent to a dependent adjectival (relative) clause.
   (2) Adverbial, in which the participle is equivalent to a dependent adverbial (conjunctive) clause; subdivided into (a) modal (manner and means), (b) temporal, (c) causal, (d) final, (e) concessive, and (f) conditional clauses. Some participles denoting manner, however, are equivalent, not to dependent adverbial clauses, but to simple adverbs.
   (3) Co-ordinate, in which the participle is substantially equivalent to an independent clause; subdivided into (a) the "circumstantial" participle in the narrower sense, which merely denotes an accompanying circumstance; and (b) the
"iterating" participle, which simply repeats the idea of the chief verb.

6. As to the origin of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon, in some uses it is (A) native and in others (B) foreign (Latin).

A. Native.

(1) In the following uses the appositive participle appears to be a native English idiom:

(a) The adjectival use of the preterite participle and, perhaps, of a few slightly verbal present participles like living, lying (liegenden), etc.

(b) The modal use of the present and of the preterite participle when each denotes manner.

(c) Perhaps the temporal use in a few present participles of slight verbal force like being, living, and sleeping.

(2) The grounds for the statements in (1) are as follows:

(a) In the uses there specified the appositive participle is found in Early West Saxon. (b) It occurs, also, in Late West Saxon, in the more original prose (the Chronicle, the Laws, and Wulfstan), and in the poems not known to be based on Latin originals as well as in those believed to be translations. (c) In a number of instances in the translations, the Old English participle does not correspond to an appositive participle in the Latin original, but to various other constructions (see Tables at end of Chapter III). (d) In these uses the appositive participle is common in the other Teutonic languages.

B. Foreign (Latin).

(3) In the uses named below, on the contrary, the appositive participle is not a native English construction, but is borrowed from the Latin:

(a) The adjectival use of the present participle except in a few that have but little verbal force like living and lying.
(b) The modal use of the present and of the preterite participle when each denotes means.

(c) The temporal use of the participle except in a few slightly verbal present participles like being, living, and sleeping.

(d) The causal use of the present and of the preterite participle, though the latter may in part be an extension of the adjectival preterite participle.

(e) The final use of the participle, though this may in a slight degree be due to the frequent predicative use of the present participle after verbs of motion in Anglo-Saxon.

(f) The concessive use of the participle.

(g) The conditional use of the participle.

(h) The co-ordinate use of the participle.

(i) The present participle (whether adjectival, adverbial, or co-ordinate) when it governs an object in construction.

(4) The statements of (3) are believed to be substantiated by the following considerations: (a) The specified uses of the appositive participle are practically unknown in Early West Saxon; and, in the few instances in which they do occur, they are usually in direct translation of a Latin appositive participle. (b) In hundreds of instances Alfred expressly avoided the constructions, although they occurred on every page of his Latin originals. (c) These uses are very rare in the more original prose (the Chronicle, the Laws, and Wulfstan), and in almost every instance have been traced to a direct or indirect Latin prototype. (d) They are very rare, too, in Anglo-Saxon poetry, and are found almost exclusively in the poems known to rest on Latin originals. (e) They seldom occur in the other Germanic languages except in the more slavish translations. (f) They are very common, on the other hand, in the later and closer Anglo-Saxon translations (Ælfric, the Gospels, and Benet).—The cogency of these arguments varies somewhat with respect to the several uses; concerning which see the detailed treatment in Chapter III.

(5) From the above statements ((1)—(4)) as to the different origin of the several uses of the appositive participle we draw
this general conclusion: Anglo-Saxon was favorable to the appositive participle with pronounced adjectival (descriptive) force, but was unfavorable to the appositive participle with strong verbal (assertive) force.

7. Originally in Anglo-Saxon, the present appositive participle did not have the power of governing a direct object in construction. All present participles with a direct object are due to Latin influence.

8. Nor did the preterite appositive participle have the power of governing an accusative of the direct object. Only one example occurs in the whole of Anglo-Saxon literature, and that is in imitation of the Latin original.

9. The Anglo-Saxon substitutes for the appositive participle were:
   (1) Most frequently a co-ordinated finite verb.
   (2) Somewhat less frequently a subordinated finite verb.
   (3) Not infrequently a prepositional phrase.
   (4) Occasionally a verb in the infinitive mood, both inflected and uninflected.
   (5) Rarely an attributive participle.
   (6) In a few instances an absolute participle.
   (7) Occasionally an adverb.
   (8) Rarely an adjective.
   (9) Very rarely a substantive.

10. Although my treatment of the appositive participle in the other Germanic languages is professedly not exhaustive, it seems to make probable the following conclusions:
(1) The uses of the appositive participle in the other Teutonic languages are on the whole substantially the same as in Anglo-Saxon, but with considerable variation in the different languages and authors. Ulfilas and Tatian, for instance, are much more addicted to the appositive participle, especially that with verbal force, than are any of the Anglo-Saxon writers except the author of Benet, which is a gloss.
(2) In the other Teutonic languages as in Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle is of two-fold origin. The adverbial participle denoting manner, the adjectival (relative) past participle, the adjectival present and the temporal participle in such verbs as be, live, and sleep, are perhaps native. In all other uses the appositive participle, whether present or past, is probably of Greek (Ulfilas) or Latin origin, though in one or two of these functions, as in Anglo-Saxon, the appositive participle may in part be an extension of the attributive or the predicative use of the participle. The present appositive participle with an object in construction seems to be of wholly foreign origin.

(3) The substitutes for the appositive participle are about the same in the other Germanic Languages as in Anglo-Saxon.

11. As for its stylistic effect, in Anglo-Saxon as in the classical languages the appositive participle conduces to rapidity, compactness, and flexibility. In the adjectival use of the preterite participle and in the adverbial use of the present and of the preterite denoting manner, this is more or less exemplified in all periods of Anglo-Saxon; and in the poetry the participle contributes, also, to picturesqueness. The other uses of the appositive participle were practically ignored by the Early West Saxons, and to this fact are largely due the unwieldiness and the monotony of Alfred’s style. Ælfric and the translators of the Gospels, on the other hand, adopted these uses from the Latin, and handled the same almost as skillfully as do modern Englishmen; whence results in great measure the excellence of Ælfric’s style in point of flexibility and grace. But these innovations were looked upon coldly by Ælfric’s immediate successors (Wulfstan and the author of the Peterborough Chronicle), and scarcely became thoroughly naturalized during the Anglo-Saxon period.

MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.
ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS.

Originally not intending to discuss the inflection of the appositive participle, I did not in my first draft jot down all the peculiar forms observed. After deciding to treat the subject, I thought that the Introduction could be held in type until the final proving and printing of the Statistics. But, as their bulk made this impossible, the following additions and corrections are called for in the section of the Introduction (iv) dealing with the inflection of the appositive participle:

**The Present Participle.**

NS. (p. 150):—L. 7 from below: change *three* to *two*, and strike out *Ælfyr. L. S. 282. 5*; for, after the preparation of the Statistics, I received vol. iv of Skeat’s edition of this work, in the "Errata". of which he corrects *feohtend* to *feohtende*. This, of course, changes *feohtend* in my Statistics (p. 197, l. 27).

L. 3 from below: change *four* to *five*, and add 104. 16 after 95. 11.

L. 1 from below: to exceptions add -*ande*: *Benet*¹ 68. 1; -*ynde*: *Mat.*¹ 9. 29.

ASM. (p. 151, l. 6):—*Ælfyr. L. S. 78. 489* has -*ande*, which reduces the number of -*ende* by one.

N. and A. PMFN. (p. 151, l. 10): to the exceptions add: (1) masculine: -*ande*: *Benet*¹ 55. 4, *Greg.*¹ 123. 16: -*onde*: *Bede*¹ 72. 9, *Bened.* 9. 7; -*ynde*: *Mat.*¹ 9. 27, 31; (2) neuter: -*ande*: *Ælfyr. L. S. 224. 86.*²

**The Preterite Participle.**

NSM. (p. 151, l. 16):—*Benet*¹ 100. 3 has *bepæht* for *bepæht*; and *Chron.* 1048 E has *unswican*. 
DSMN. (p. 151, l. 22) :—insert -on after -an.

ASM. (p. 151, l. 6 from below) :—to the inflectional ending add -um for -an, weak (Bede\textsuperscript{1} 130. 33), and see p. 153, where the example is quoted in full.

ASN. (p. 152, l. 1) :—Mat.\textsuperscript{1} 11. 7 has -yd instead of -ed.

NPM. (p. 152, l. 2) :—Laws (Wihtr., c. 4) has -yne instead of -ene; and Benet\textsuperscript{1} 113. 9 has astreht\textsuperscript{8} for astreht.

NAPN. (p. 152, l. 7) :—to the inflectional endings add -u (Greg.\textsuperscript{1} 245. 8\textsuperscript{a} \textsuperscript{b}), in which the participles are probably accusatives rather than nominatives (as given on p. 173, l. 10). Beow. 3049 has d\textsuperscript{y}rhetone instead of d\textsuperscript{y}rhetene.

GP. (p. 152, l. 10) :—to the exception add geserede: Elene 992.

DPM. (p. 152, l. 11) :—to the inflectional ending add -e: A\textaelfr. Hept. (Judges 16. 7).

On p. 203, ll. 8, 18, and 25, strike out uncu\textsuperscript{d}.

The following typographical errors should be noted:—

P. 146, l. 26: change dash to hyphen.

P. 147, l. 2: for rechfertigen read rechtfertigen.

P. 149, l. 16: for Indo-Germanic read Indo-Germanic.

P. 180, l. 23: for unbefohtene read unbefohltene.

P. 181, l. 11: for s\textsuperscript{inge} read s\textsuperscript{ingc}.

P. 185, l. 26: for geondead = angaritia: 7. 54 read geneadod = 54. 7: angariati.

P. 288, l. 12: for o\textwesende read o\textwesende.

M. C., JR.

A NOTE OF THANKS.

I wish heartily to thank my colleagues in the School of English, Drs. Killis Campbell and Pierce Butler, and my honored teacher, Professor James W. Bright, for gracious help in the issuing of this monograph. Each of the three has kindly assisted in reading the proof, and has offered valuable suggestions for the betterment of my study.

M. C., JR.
BIBLIOGRAPHY.

I. Texts Read.

a. Anglo-Saxon.


Ælf. Hept. = ib.


Ælf. L. S. = Skeat, Ælfric's Lives of Saints, E. E. T. S., nos. 76, 82, 94, London, 1881, 1885, 1890. Vol. IV (1900) was received too late to be read for this study. Vols. I and II are cited simply by page and line; vol. III, by number of homily and of line.


Boeth.¹ = Sedgefield, King Alfred's Old English Version of Boethius De Consolatione Philosophiae, Oxford, 1899. [For the prose only; the Metres are taken from Grein-Wülker's Bibl. der ags. Poesie.]

Christ = Albert S. Cook, The Christ of Cynewulf, Boston, 1900.


Poems = Grein-Wülker's Bibliothek der ags. Poesie, 3 vols., Kassel, 1881-1898. [For all the poems except Cynewulf's Christ, which see above.]

Ps. Th.¹ = Thorpe, Libri Psalmorum Versio antiqua Latina cum Paraphrasi Anglo-Saxonica, Oxonii, 1835. [For the prose psalms only; the poetical ones are cited from Grein-Wülker.]


b. Latin.


Benet.² = Latin in Benet.¹

Boeth.² = Peiper, Boetii Philosophiae Consolationis Libri Quinque, Leipzig, 1871.


Hept.² = Latin Heptateuch, etc., given in Ælf. Hept., which see.

Oros.² = Latin in Oros.¹

Ps. Th.² = Latin in Ps. Th.¹ [The Introductions are taken from Bruce in ii.]

II. WORKS CITED.

Bartlett, Helen: The Metrical Division of the Paris Psalter, Baltimore, 1896.


Behaghel, O.: Die Syntax des Héliaut, Wien, 1897.


THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 357

Conradi, B.: Darstellung der Syntax in Cynewulf's Juliana, Halle, 1886.
Einenkel, E.: Streifzüge durch die Mittelengl. Syntax, Münster, 1887.
Erdmann, O.: Untersuchungen über die Syntax der Sprache Otfrids, Halle, 1874.
Erdmann, O.: Grundzüge der Deutschen Syntax, I, Stuttgart, 1886; II, by Erdmann and Mensing, 1898.
Flamme, J.: Syntax der Blickling Homilies, Bonn, 1885.
Gollancz, I.: Cynewulf's Christ, London, 1892.
Grimm, J.: Andreas und Elene, Cassel, 1840.
Helm, F.: Quaestiones Syntaxicae de Participiorum Usu Tacitino Velleiano Sallustiano, 1879.
Hickes: Institutiones Grammaticae, Oxoniae, 1689;—Thesaurus Grammatico-Criticus, Oxoniae, 1705.
Kent, C. W.: Elene, Boston, 1889.
Kinard, J. P.: A Study of Wulfstan's Homilies: Their Style and Sources, Baltimore, 1897.
Lücke, O.: Absolute Particiapia im Gotischen u. ihr Verhältn. zum Gr. Original, Magdeburg, 1876.
Lund, G. F. V.: Oldnordisk Ordföjningslære, København, 1862.


Schrader, B.: *Studien zur Ælfricschen Syntax*, Jena, 1887.


Tammelin, E. J.: De Participiis Priscae Latinitatis Questiones Syntaxicae, Helsingfors, 1889.
Thomas, C.: A Practical German Grammar, New York, 1895 (?).
Torp: see Falk.
Von Jageman, H. C. G.: Elements of German Syntax, New York, 1892.
Wunderlich, H.: Beiträge zur Syntax des Notker’schen Boethius, Berlin, 1883 (?).

M. C., JR.
Callaway, M.
The appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon